CONSTANTIA;

OR, A

TRUE PICTURE

OF

HUMAN LIFE,

Represented in

Fifteen Evening Conversations,

After the Manner of BOCCACE.

In TWO VOLUMES.

To which is prefixed,

A Short DISCOURSE on Novel Writing.



LONDON:

rinted for A. MILLAR, over-against Catharine-street in the Strand, M,DCC,LI.

CONSTANTIA;

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBHARY

HE GIFT OF AU AT

FRIENDS OF THE LIBRARY

(2 2226)

HUMANLIFE

Represented in-

Fifteen Evening Convertsions,

After the Manner of Boccaca

In TWO VOLUMES.

To which is prefixed,

A Short Discourse on Novel Writing



C

br

LONDON:

Printed for A. Mitthan, over against C. intine Siect in the Stand, M. DCC., i. in the Stand, M. DCC., i.

and deprayed, or to aim at altering their notions, in order to fubblished our own, are modily unfoceleful, often ridiculous



having any passion for reading, neisher do they esteem it a thing necessity. If genius impels, if business constrains, or seculents

PREFACE.

those who are unimpelled and uninclined to study, books of amulement alone have

MONGST those topics of complaint, which if not general are at least common, we hear it urged as a point of great consequence,

that scarce any are now read but books of amusement. If this charge be well founded, as indeed sew popular complaints are without grounds, the wisest course a well meaning man can take, would be to give such a turn to this humour, as may render it useful and beneficial. For to differ from the world in what they approve; to run down their taste as vicious A 2 and

and depraved, or to aim at altering their notions, in order to substitute our own, are mostly unsuccessful, often ridiculous employments. The majority of mankind, as experience shews, are very far from having any passion for reading, neither do they esteem it a thing necessary. If genius impels, if business constrains, or accidents invite, men apply themselves to books without exhortations. But with respect to those who are unimpelled and uninclined to fludy, books of amusement alone have a chance of coming into their hands, and consequently of producing an alteration in fuch tempers. This has been always a plea for these performances, and has been received and held good by the most able that fearee any are now reed but beregbil

It was infifted upon as such many ages ago by one of the ancientest writers, on the subjects of heroic love and unalterable constancy, and who, if some very learned men are not mistaken, was the first author of novels: the venerable Heliodorus, bishop of Tricca, whose Ethiopian bishory;

bistory; or, the loves of Theagenes and Characlea, is very deservedly esteemed one of the best, if not the very best of its kind; as the Iliad of Homer, in the opinion of the greatest critics, is both the first and the finest of epic poems. Thus it appears, though at a great distance of time, that both these kinds of writings were derived to us from the same nation; and though they have been copied by very ingenious pens, in almost all polite countries, it has been allowed that the originals stand yet unrivalled; and that with respect to accuracy of method; beauty of language, and delicacy of fentiment, the prelate and the poet are equally fuperior to the moderns.

n

n

C

n

le

1-

0-

371

y ;

This fort of learning, from a multitude of circumstances, suiting extremely with the genius of the Italians, was introduced amongst them earlier, and more cultivated by them after it was introduced, than by any other nation; so that it would be easy to mention a long catalogue of eminent authors of that country, A 3 who

who are thought to have improved upon each other; though if I mistake not, the most ancient collection of tales in that language is without any name. Thefe are mostly amorous, and though, generally speaking, full of wit, well imagined and elegantly written, yet are often chargeable with two defects; the first. that they contain a variety of indecent intrigues, expressed with such a dangerous degree of art, as may render them improper for the perufal of young people especially; and the other, that they are big with fo many cruel and bloody incidents, that they aftonish and affright, as much as they entertain their readers, those at least who are unaccustomed to the modes of Italy.

The French foon followed them in this road, but did not make near so great or so agreeable a figure. We have several old collections in that language, which have had their admirers; yet such as speak of them with justice, must nown; that they are very far from being free from

from the first defect, and it ought at the same time to be allowed, that they have rarely fallen into the second, except when they translated or copied the Italian stories, which however they were very apt to do.

b

1

1

4

1

In Spain they translated both the Italian and the French novels, long before they attempted any thing of that kind At length, the famous Mithemselves. guel de Cervantes broke the ice, and published twelve moral histories, or exemplary novels, as he was pleased to call them, which were deservedly commended and imitated. The path being once open'd, the Spanish with exercised their pens very frequently in this way, and were foon acknowledged, even by strangers, to excel all that had gone before them. Their plots were more ingenious, and at the fame time more pleasing than the Italians; their manner as sprightly, yet better calculated for instruction, than the French. In thore, the spirit, wit and judgment of the Spanish novels, procured them a univerfal A4 nois

versal reception; so that they were quickly translated into different languages, and were every where read with a satisfaction equal to their merit. But for some time this was all, and their success, instead of encouraging others to attempt any thing in the same kind, put a stop to this sort of writing, except in Spain, from an opinion, that the Spanish novels were inimitable.

The famous Scarron was the first author in France, who ventured upon the trial, whether this notion was absolutely true or not, and introduced in his comical romance several short histories written on the Spanish model, and which he pretended were translated from that language. These having met with approbation, he wrote several other pieces of the same kind, some of which however were far from being very extraordinary.

He was followed by many of his own nation, and fome of them men of great talents, who shewed at least their inclination

· SILL OF

tion to, and high efteem for this kind of writing, by pursuing it after they had acquired a great reputation by works of another nature. Amongst these we may reckon Mr. Segrais, Bishop Huer, Abbé de St. Real, Voiture, and the famous Archbishop Fenelon, who besides his Telemamachus, which is a book of a higher class, wrote feveral little histories, that may well enough be stiled novels. time add, that amufcaseat feeins to be too

Of late years however Mr. le Sage rais'd himself, and that very justly, a great character, both by translating Spanish Novels, and by writing new ones on the same plan. He fucceeded perfectly well in both, if compared with the rest of his countrymen, but best in the former, if we compare his own writings with each other. watch at w old have been well, if thoth

The first part of the Diable Boiteux is a translation from the Diable Coivele, written by Luis Velez de Guevara; and the French themselves acknowledge, that it is much to be preferred to the second part, which is the proper work of le Sage. red med to maid A gover the The

The fuccess of this gentleman's pieces, when published in English, gave rise to that fort of writing here, and without being suspected of partiality, we may vene ture to affert, that we have more than one performance of this kind not inferior to any thing that has appeared in other languages. There is no necessity of pointing these pieces out, fince they are enough known already; but we must at the fame time add, that amusement seems to be too much their aim, and that the pleasure arifing from reading them is not fufficiently heightened by what is acquired in point of and by writing new ones on the .noifyrflai He becoreded perfectly well in both if

Cervantes, at the time he introduced novel writing in Spain, affigned motives that were very just and reasonable, and which it would have been well, if those who followed him had kept always in mind as much as he did. He observed, which is certainly very true, that all people have not a taste for grave reading, and that those who have this taste, are not always alike disposed to read serious books, and have nothing at heart but their

0/

b

0

ri

their improvement. He thought therefore, and in this no doubt he thought judiciously, that it would be rendering a great service to society, so to mingle the pleasant with the profitable, that this new species of writing might be agreeable to those who had no turn to grave authors, and serve by way of relaxation, to such as were tired with them, and yet had time upon their hands. Upon this plan he wrote his exemplary novels, to which he gave that title, because in each of them there was such an example, as properly considered, might be highly beneficial in the conduct of human life.

There is certainly no kind of writing, either useful or elegant, that does not fall under some fort of rules, and therefore we need not wonder, that the wise Spaniard believed it would be a recommendation to his novels, to let the world know, they were not wild and inconsistent pieces, written from an extravagant flow of invention, and with no other aim, than to take up the reader's time; but were reader's time;

ally the product of study and thought, and had a laudable end, though conducted with a spirit of gaiety, intermixed with lively descriptions, heightened now and then with moral reslections, and enlivened also on proper occasions with some free strokes of satire.

To declare roundly, that a book is intended for no purpose whatever; that it is calculated purely to kill time, to foften the reader's morals, to feduce the mind to pleasure, or to banish those notions, which by the common consent of the wife in all ages are the true principles of right conduct, is what no man would have the face to do; or if he did, himfelf and his book would be fure to be treated as they deserved. But if this be fo, it will be altogether as wicked, tho not quite fo shameless, to venture on the act without making fuch a declaration; and therefore we fee plainly, that there is and must be a certain standard for books of amusement, as well as for books of every other kind; and that notwithstanding they ven: admit

admit an ease, a freedom, and a pleasantry, which would be unbecoming in any other performances, yet they must be of some utility, for otherwise they could never please.

the intents ad non

1

what office

To fay the truth, the principal object of fuch books is to entertain the imagination, and captivate the attention, by agreeable relations, that the judgment may be the better disposed to receive instruction; and it is in consideration of so good an end, that certain liberties are permitted to these kind of performances, which would otherwise be condemned. This condition therefore must be always bore in mind, the obligation fulfilled, and those liberties kept within their due bounds. To comply with these rules indeed may be extremely difficult; but the great art of writing is not to let that difficulty appear; and it is also true, that some indulgence may be deserved, but it must be by adhering to the great point, and making the public an amends for trivial overfights, and fmall escapes from the Jale Lynn

the right road, by manifesting a good difposition, and shewing plainly, that such faults proceeded from inattention, and not from any bad design.

But it may be demanded, what uses can books of this fort answer? To this we may very fafely reply, that if properly directed, they may have many, and those very good consequences. In the first place, they may serve to conquer that aversion which some young people have to reading, by presenting to their view a variety of agreeable feenes, that cannot fail of affording them a pleasing entertainment, if they have any kind of genitis, or any portion of good fenfe; fince it is frequently found, that it is not fo much the matter as the manner that difgufts young people in receiving instruction; and it is through want of complaifance in this respect, that many decline, and some despite knowledge, who if they had been conducted in another road, would have purfued it with great alacrity.
When the Dauphin, grandfather to the present

F

h

30

est

lo

25

re

Y

d

ie

at

re

a

E

.

e

o

C

u

-

,

e

t

present French king was married, he said the next morning, with an air of gaiety, to one, who was near his person, We shall see now whether Mr. Huet will oblige me to go through the course of ancient geography. He was pleased, because his new state of life delivered him from a series of severe study, which instead of answering the proposed end, made him hate the sight of a book as long as he lived. But this surely was more the fault of his preceptor than his own.

Pieces of this nature serve to open the mind. That air of familiarity with which the reader is entertained, engages him to proceed, gives him new lights, brings fresh images to his view, leads him to an acquaintance with persons and things of which he had never heard; diversifies such representations with a great variety of circumstances; rouzes his thoughts by short resections; leads him to others by artful descriptions, and by interesting him in the relation, gives him a pleasure in foresecing the event, or perhaps a greater in differential

appointing his forefight, provided this be artfully done; and he discovers upon the whole, that the catastrophe is perfectly just, notwithstanding its being altogether unexpected.

We may take from books of this kind great advantages in impressing right principles, with respect to virtue, good sense and good manners. Characters well marked and well supported throughout, will not fail of doing this. Young minds are more capable of discerning the connection between causes and events, than is generally apprehended; neither are they at all unwilling to employ study and pains on fuch subjects, provided they are discreetly conducted, and their attention not too long taken up with the fame object. For this reason, short stories are the most expedient, and it is to reach the same end, that fo many episodes are introduced in long works, which however do not anfwer the purpose so well, because they divide and distract the thoughts of an impatient reader, which are best contracted and miniogo fettled

fettled by a relation that falls within a moderate compais. The salt and one to some

18

n

ly

er

69

du

d

7-

fe.

Z-

113

re

n

-

11:

n

y

0

r

21

1

n

-1

-

d

d

We may confider works of this kind alfo, as a fort of artificial experience, by which the nature of mankind, and an acquaintance with the world, may be infused imperceptibly without fatigue and without danger. Vices may be exposed without making youth too much acquainted with them, and folly shewn in a ridiculous light, without inspiring that love for raillery, which is feldom attended with any good effects. Laftly, not to multiply the advantages which may be deduced from books of amusement beyond measure and beyond credit, they may certainly serve to give such characters of the paffions, their fources, fymptoms, and inevitable consequences, as could not easily be conveyed any other way; they may afford cautions against those snares and delufions to which young people on their first entrance into life are most exposed; they may enable fuch persons to distinguish flatterers from friends; the artifices practifed

practifed to give one passion the appearance of another; the fatal incumbrances, brought on by too early and hafty attachments i and in short there is hardly any great or good purpole, which if skilfully managed, they may not be made to ferve, with this fingular addition in their favour, that they do it effectually, because the maxims that arise from them, conceived through the reader's own reflection, have much more weight than they could derive, either from argument or authority. One may not be understood, the other secretly difliked; but the dictates of his own mind are leffons that no man suspects or ced from books of amulementbragarlib menture and beyond credie, they may ber-

But if, after all, such pieces may be of so great use, and are capable of answering such excellent purposes, the greatest care must be taken, that they should not be this applied. It is consequently the duty of an author to avoid letting fall any thing in a work of this nature, that has a tendency to mislead the understanding, or to blemish the reader's morals. Religion is

ar-

ces,

ch-

any

illy

ve,

ur,

the

red

ive

ve,

ne

tly

wn

or

100

MI

of

ng

חו

if-

of

ng

n-

or

on

is

is very seldom to be meddled with, as being too ferious a subject; but at the same time there ought not to be the least glance of a contrary nature. Strict regard to truth should appear in every character, no fictitious virtues introduced, no extenuation of vices, as if they were excufable from habit, custom, or constitution; no calumny interspersed, under the pretence of exhibiting and exposing foibles in perfons otherwise respectable; no indecent intrigues described with a dexterity, that inflead of deterring, may excite imitation; no warm and tender scenes that trespass on that purity of mind, which is the great guard of youth, in thort, nothing that may corrupt under the guise of informing; nothing that may inflame or footh the passions, to the prejudice of reason, or teach the art of framing plaufible excuses, instead of creating a constancy of mind in pursuing virtue, though attended with the greatest inconveniencies.

down but adhered to there cannot send tainly

tainly any inconveniencies arise from the agreeable descriptions, surprising adventures, or pleasing sictions, with which works of this nature are adorned, and in which a great part of their merit consists; since it is by the help of such innocent machines happily contrived, those important truths are conveyed, which would not be so easily received, their truth so fully comprehended, or their force so immediately felt in any other method.

How far the following sheets will be found confistent with these notions, and in what degree they will operate, must be left to the decision of the public. But if we may take the liberty of a fhort remark at parting, it may not be amiss to put the reader in mind, that as there never was a time in which an inclination to this fort of writing was more in fashion than at present; so of course there never was feafon in which the cautions before-mentioned, were more necessary, or when it was more fit to consider, how the public tafte may be rendered subservient to the vlnis1 interest

interest of individuals, by turning to real advantage a kind of reading, from which amusement only is commonly expected, and converting trisles and toys, if it may be, into jewels and gifts of price; for notwithstanding entertainment and diversion are very natural, and perhaps also necessary to youth, and to those who have much leisure, and no arduous employments; yet Time is undoubtedly the greatest of all Treasures, though of that there are the fewest Misers.

interest of individuals, by turning to real advantage a kind of reading, from which amusement only is commonly expected, and converting trules and toys, if it may be, into jewels and gifts of price; for notwith-francing entertainment and diversion are very natural, and perhaps also necessary to youth, and to those who have much leisure, and no arduous employments; yet Time is undeadedly the greatest of all True is undeadedly the greatest of all fewest Missers.

the South distriction that conclusion Alex

the second of the second second second

Sharan Sh

TABLE

Female Revenge; or, the force of Delines. The renerous Lovers; or, the adventures a

Frederick and Europia. Heroic Charity; or, the Vision of King Al-

CONTEN

fred. From car andent chronicles 186

TO THE

FIRST VOLUME.

DReface Page iii Introduction The obstinate Genoese; or, the amazing adventures of Signior Salardo. An Italian bistory The marvellous Discovery; or, Innocence rescued from the grave. Out of the Spanish 40 Fortitude surpasses fortune; or, the Triumph of Constancy. A Portuguese bistory The beroic Husband; or, the mourning Beauty. An Italian bistory 95 Female

xxiv CONTENTS.

Female Revenge; or, the force of D.	estiny.
From the French	119
The generous Lovers; or, the adventu	res of
Frederick and Eugenia. A Flemis	
tory	144
Heroic Charity; or, the Vision of Kin	g Al-
fred. From our ancient chronicles	
Conclusion	224

AHT OT

MIRST VOLUME.

Reface

Invoduction

The invoduction

The oblition of Elgnish Sukards, Liu Italian

wentures of Elgnish Sukards, Liu Italian

The morrallous Discovery; on, Invacence

rescard from the grave. Out of the

Spanish

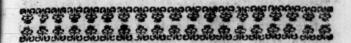
Toringle survassies fortune; or, the Triumph

La berai, Ilusard; or, the mourning Brandy.

La berai, Ilusard; or, the mourning Brandy.

An Italian bilony

95



INTRODUCTION.

T the distance of about half a day's journey from one of those places, to which at certain seasons there is a great resort of the best company, partly on the score of health, but chiefly for the sake of amusement, there lived a lady, blest by nature with great accom-

lived a lady, bleft by nature with great accomphilments, happy in the use as well as possesfion of an affluent fortune, and fo far advanced in years, as to add the lights of an extensive experience to those derived from an excellent education, and a genius penetrating, but not fatyrical. Her rank and manner of living, her connection with various families of distinction. but above all, her agreeable disposition, exquifite breeding, and unaffected benevolence, attracted a conftant circle of worthy and ingenious persons to share in the rational pleasures which dignified her retreat. A proof that female merit may always maintain its superiority. and that the luftre of true virtue and folid good fense will preserve an entertaining and agreeable homage, when that troublesome adoration which waits on the eclat of beauty is no more.

But as in courts a few only of those who are well received in the drawing room, and but a very few are allowed access to the closet; so in assemblies, where a free and independent genius Vol. I.

B

presides.

prelition

presides, there will be always a small number of intimates selected from a general acquaintance to enjoy the delights of that privacy from which their relish in some measure arises. so fell out at this lady's. Six or seven persons, fome her near relations, and fome united only by the tie of friendship, had the honour of her confidence, and fpent with her those hours which are the most pleasant on the retrospect of a long life. They had all of them that peculiarity in their character, which the world terms heing fingular; and therefore those who were admitted only to the ordinary freedoms of the family, were wont to stile this close committee. by way of raillery, the illustrious Malecontents: and which is not a little remarkable, they knew, and were not displeased with that appellation; confidering it as having some foundation in truth, and carrying in their apprehension no fort of imputation.

It was however otherwife with the vulgar, they fancied to themselves, as indeed what else can vulgar imaginations fancy? ftrange subjects canvassed at these meetings. Some referred them to politicks, others to religious enthuliasm, but the greater part were clear, that fcandal found them employment. A notion not only altogether false in itself, but carrying in it the ftrongest evidence: this is a weakness incident only to inferior minds, that feeling no greater pleasure themselves, than what they take in foreading calumny; at once, gratify their own gross tastes, and injure whom they can never imitate, by ascribing it to their betters. Not confidering that those, who move with dignity in superior spheres, have very different senti-

ments,

ments, and are under no temptation to facrifice the characters of others to raife their own. There may indeed be persons of the highest rank tainted with this vice, but in them the habit of scandal is not only vicious but unnatural; because they can never degrade others without feeling their just punishment in the very act, than which nothing can so effectually degrade themselves.

But stories from being absurd as well as groundless, are rather more than less believed, and so it happened here; for in a few years space a tale that was foolishly as well as maliciously invented, gained fuch boldness from the frequent repetition of idle people, as to pass for an established The following pages will shew with how little reason. That select company had amongst them one, who assumed to himself the office of fecretary, who for his own amusement, and from a desire of preserving what he thought might one day be of public use, collected what passed in those hours of retirement, and reduced into writing those exercises of the understanding which many readers will find commendable, and all must confess to be innocent. But to make them thoroughly understood, it will be requisite to fay fomething of the persons who were the authors of thefe little pieces, the accident that produced them, and the rules originally prescribed, and which they constantly and religioufly purfued.

Lady Constantia was about fifty five, and without rifing into the highest scenes of splendour, or finking into deep diffress, had feen variety of fortune. Her birth, her beauty, and the boundless indulgence of a father's fondness

4

for his only child, had placed her, when in the bloom of youth, in a very conspicuous point of light. Her own choice, which was confequently that of her father's, bestowed her, when about twenty, upon Colonel Careless, a gentleman endowed with many amiable and shining qualities, in the number of which however œconomy was not included. He was not profuse, but at the fame time he was not prudent. He loved magnificence, he felt compassion, and these were the fources of an expence, which tho' his own and his lady's income were large, exceeded both. He left her at the age of forty, as widows are frequently left, with a numerous family, and an encumbred fuccession. A quick resolution of living much within bounds, and a fleady adhesence to it, were the means by which the extricated herfelf from this difficulty, without prejudice to her children's education. In the time of her widowhood, the faw her eldeft fon poffeffed of a clear estate, his two younger brothers provided for, and the favings of her jointure, notwithstanding the manner in which she lived, sufficient to raife in a few years fortunes for her two daughters.

The younger of these, Miss Charlotte, lived with her mother, and, with her sister Henrietta had been bred under her eye. She had taught them, without their well conceiving how, and by the force rather of example than of precept, all that it became young ladies to know, and particularly had engaged them in the perusal of the best French and Italian authors, as well as those deservedly esteemed in their own language. These exercises had furnished them with just and elevated sentiments, as well as enabled them

he

of

ly

ut

1-

S.

as

1e

·

re

n

1.

e.

n

of

-

-

f

d

0

1

all

to speak with unusual grace and propriety, and yet without the least mixture of that pertness and overbearing humour, which is almost inseparable from a superficial acquaintance with books. Henrietta the eldest, and who had the higher spirit of the two, resided with her father's sister, after lady Constantia had taken into her family a young lady, of whose character we are next to speak, and who, without any other cause whatever, was the object of Miss Henrietta's dislike.

Califta was of the age of nineteen, exceedingly agreeable in the opinion of those who commended her least, a perfect beauty with such as felt no uneafiness in doing her justice; yet her temper was more amiable than her person, her good fense was very conspicuous, her good nature more fo. She had an affection for lady Constantia, which instead of discovering she endeavoured to conceal, but an attention and respect, which manifested itself on every occafion; her tenderness for Miss Charlotte was altogether natural, which was rewarded on the other hand with as great a proportion of love as the could have born to a fifter. Lady Constantia called Calista niece, Miss Charlotte coufin, which Miss Henrietta, who with much wit had a little ill nature, was accustomed to stile a family fecret never divulged, because no mortal knew how that relation arose. But Henrietta herself allowed, that if a graceful person and nobleness of mind were fure indications of birth, they were Calista's sponsors; but she added, that so much beauty and wit in a nobody was intolerable. It was to preserve the peace of the family, and that respect which lady Constantia expected

all about her should pay Calista, and which was very willingly paid, that Miss Henrietta went to live with her aunt, but not without coming sometimes to visit her mother, when without any visible constraint she behaved to Calista ve-

ry civilly.

There was at this time another lady in the house, one Mrs. Anguish, the daughter of Colonel Careles's brother, born in England, but brought up from the time she was thirteen years old at Barcelona, where her father refided, and where before his death, she was married to a merchant of a great fortune, who was exceffively fond of her, who about two years before had brought her to England with an intent to hav remained here; but of a fudden altered his refolution, returned to Spain, leaving her an appointment of two hundred pounds a year, and jewels to a confiderable value; which however did not at all confole her for that visible distaste with which her hufband had left her, and of which she could never learn the cause. She might be faid to have taken fanctuary in her aunt's family, where she behaved with a difcretion that fet her above the reach of censure. She had fomething stately and referved in her manner, which looked like pride at first fight; but when known, her candour, good fense and piety, freed her from all suspicion upon that head. She had great kindness for her cousin Charlotte, and a fincere friendship for Califfa.

Sir Lawrence Testy was a gentleman of better than two thousand pounds a year, somewhat more than fixty, and a near relation by marriage to lady Constantia. In his youth he had much fire and gallantry, which had occasioned, towards

the

vas

ent

ng

ut

e-

he

0-

ut

ITS

be

a

f-

re

to

is

n

d

ř

e

f

Ċ

r

the middle of his life, an accident that had made a very unlucky alteration in his temper, and rendered him so positive and peevish in his family, that his eldest fon, who was a very hopeful young gentleman, upon receiving orders from his father to return home from his travels, had eloped from his tutor at Venice, and for more than a year he had been able to learn no other news of him than that he was gone into Turky, with a defign, as it was believed, of travelling by land into the Indies. Sir Lawrence affected to bear this with great insensibility, but he affected it only; and the' he spoke of him feldom, and when he did in terms very cool, and equally removed from tenderness or resentment; yet those who knew him well could easily perceive, this coft him a great deal of pain. It may feem firange, but this had actually fet right that error in his temper to which his fon's conduct was afcribed; fo that at this juncture he had all the mildness and moderation imaginable, fometimes mixed with melancholy, to divert which he came to Lady Constantia's for a fortnight or three weeks at a time. When he could lay this heaviness aside, he was not only converfible but pleafant, and would assume, with an air of raillery which made it very agreeable, that moroseness of which he was perfectly curéd.

With Sir Lawrence came usually a nephew, who had lived with him from the time of his son's going abroad, one Mr. Pensive, turned of twenty five years of age. He had been bred at the university, and considered there as one of the most promising young men of his time. His stather married the sister of Sir Lawrence, and

foon after her death his affairs falling into some disorder, he found it expedient to make a voyage to Madrass, where he obtained an handsome establishment. In the mean time this young gentleman being left with his uncle, either affected by the change of his father's circumstances, who had maintained him at a high rate when at college, or infected by Sir Lawrence's odd temper, loft all that eafe and vivacity which made him the darling of his companions at the feat of the muses, and contracted a gravity, or rather a refervedness, which threw a veil over his shining qualities, and hindered him from appearing what he really was. He had however fome lucid intervals, in which his genuine disposition stood display'd, which gave hopes to his acquaintance, that time or fome propitious accident might compleat his recovery.

A third gentleman, who at this feafon was by accident at lady Constantia's house on a visit, was captain Courtly about the age of thirty, whose father had served under colonel Careless. and who from his childhood had been admitted freely into the family. At his entrance into the world he had been guilty of some extravagancies, and his early gallantries had made fome noise; but an unexpected alteration in his conduct, which lasted long enough to shew it was fincere, procured him a good estate from an uncle, who was also his godfather; upon which he quitted the army and lived in a manner fuitable to his fortune, with the universal esteem of all who knew him. Yet in spite of the utmost civility and politeness with which he behaved in the company of the ladies, it was fufpected he had taken some distaste to the fex, as his

his behaviour was irreproachable on the fide of pleasure; and as on the other he had refused some very advantageous overtures, under pretence, that having addicted himself to a philosophic freedom, it was impossible for him to relish any other life. In all other respects his disposition remained the same; it had ever been gay, chearful, and of a most agreeable conversation, from a thorough tincture of polite literature, and a more perfect knowledge of the world, than could be expected from one of his years, and who had been for some time im-

mersed in pleasures.

2

-

d

The last character with which we are to bring the reader acquainted, is that of Mr. Beaumont who was towards fifty, a man of letters, who tho' he could unbend himself with eafe, made study the principal business of his life. He had fome old fashioned tenets in religion and politicks, in which, tho' he was very steady, yet he had nothing of peevishness in his composition, but could bear being rallied upon his antiquated principles without losing his temper; and in respect to the hurt they had done him in the progress of his fortune, would sometimes treat them humourously himself. He was well received by persons even in very opposite sentiments, to whom his candour and fincerity attoned for notions that turned to no body's prejudice but his own. He had a contempt for grandeur and riches, but was highly in love with independency, and with the power of being content in very moderate circumstances, while he was able, as he phrased it, to keep the bird fafe in his breaft. This gentleman, who was the common friend of all the company, was B 5 allo.

The persons we have mentioned were by mere chance met one evening in a little parlour, to which lady Constantia usually retired upon the breaking up of the company after fupper. Whether owing to the intemperate rains, which had lately fallen, to the unufual refort of strangers, who had kept their complaifance upon the ftretch for many hours; or to fome other fecret cause, which human fagacity may fearch in vain; fo it was, that folcon, which by turns infelted them all, bore universal sway, except over lady Constantia. Charlotte and Califta fat on each fide of her, bufy with their needles, tho' working at that time of night was not their custom. Mrs. Anguish was playing with her fan, Sir Lawrence jogging one knee, with his eyes fixed on the ceiling, while those of Mr. Pensive were rivetted on the fire; captain Courtly humm'd a tune foftly; and Mr. Beaumont fat composed and filent, not in the vapours himself, but on the very point of catching the infection, by contemplating the reft. The good lady role fmiling, and having flirred the fire, to rouse them a little, bespoke them thus a bus another of brend head them them

I know you have all some acquaintance with the muses, and therefore give me leave to read to you a paper of verses, I met with in the summer house, in a hand with which I am unacquainted. This had a good effect, the young ladies laid aside their work. Mrs. Anguish closed her fan, captain Courtly desired her labyship would proceed, and the rest giving evident

dent marks of attention, she opened her paper, and read the following lines, with admirable propriety of voice and gesture.

True history, presents the deeds of men, Traces their fleps, and brings again to fight, The paths they trod. Uncertain of the caufe, That mov'd their actions, or the views concealed, Of the great things they did. Hence oft constrain'd To censure wrong, or give unearned applause, To acts illustrious, the perhaps they sprung, From most unworthy motives. But not fo Ideal Story, fram'd to follow truth, Explore the paffions, paint the working mind, Its storms and calms, how peace and war by turns, Or footh or fwell the breaft: and whence the fprings Of human happiness, and human forrow. Connecting virtue with its just reward: And dragging all the hidden woes of vice, Into the face of day. That youth may learn, Unbought experience, and decline the road, Tho' strew'd with flowers, that leads to grief and pain.

What if these lessons want the glitt'ring pomp, Of chosen words, or weighty sentences, Describe not palaces, or tournaments, Long sieges, bloody battles, ambuscades Or interviews of peace or costly shews? Yet may they please the ear and pierce the heart. That eloquence, which in the plainest dress Accosts us, with a slow of easy sounds, Expressing clearly, what it means to say, Taking its subject, from samiliar things, To private men, in common walks of life, Affects us most, and sinks into the thought,

12 INTRODUCTION:

As what concern us. While superior things, Charm for a moment and are then forgot. Nor without cause, since if the truth we speak They're nought to us, and we are nought to them.

But in the moral tale, if rightly plann'd, As in a mirror we behold our felves. See ev'ry blemish, mark whate're deforms, The minds pure aspect, or distorts the soul. Or av'rice, or ambition's dropsi'd skin, The yellow taint of heartfelt jealoufy, The flush of pride, the livid cheek of envy, Hate's ever wrinkled brow, the leer of Scorn, And all the outward figns of guilt within. Happy his genius! who with skill confess'd, Can touch with art conceal'd, the striking piece, That with delight, instruction may convey. Nor those less happy! who retired from crowds, And all the transports of tumultuous joys, Can tafte fuch pleasure, and attentive bear, What prudence dictates, when she kindly would, Amend the heart, and recreate the mind.

The ladies agreed they were very pretty, Sir Lawrence faid the observation was just, captain Courtly approved his sentiment, Mr. Pensive desired to look upon them, Beaumont added coldly, that some strokes in them were not amiss, but that he thought they were unfinished, and but a hasty sketch of what their author intended. It may be so, replied lady Constantia, but I am sure they have had a good effect, for I perceive they have restored us all to our senses. Come, what say you to pursuing the thought? It came into my head this morning when I had read them, that it would furnish a pleasing and rational

tional evening's amusement, if each of you would try either to compose or to remember some little story, that when the ceremonies of the day are over, may avert your evening cares, and enable us to part in good humour. It is in vain to plead inability, I know you all too well to accept that pitiful excuse, and when I say, I seek your ease as much as my own pleasure, I am satisfied you'll own me right. Speak then, or I shall take silence for consent, and go on to

mark the outlines of my project.

Mrs. Anguish faid it was whimfical and new. and therefore the approved it. The two young ladies smiled and blushed. Sir Lawrence said it was natural for old people to tell, and for young ones to like stories. Mr. Pensive bowed, captain Courtly gave his confent, and Beaumont feemed to think the proposition did not immediately concern him; and indeed from the feriousness of his turn, lady Constantia was inclined to exempt him. The company then joined in requesting her ladyship, that she would be pleased to communicate the rest of her defign, and would also fix the commencement of their labours. In the first place, said she, methinks inftruction should be consulted, my verses fay it can be no way confulted fo well; next, let every one be free in the choice of the Subject, and the manner of treating it without being tied to invention, translation, or imitation, and without entring into a discussion of the liberties taken, or the grounds upon which they were taken. I should be likewise very much delighted to fee thefe tales concluded with an application in verse, which will be the more easy as we are all lovers of poetry. As every body fpend 4 70 19

spend their mornings how they please, we need not defer the execution long, and therefore on Monday evening I shall expect that you'll be all ready, and till then I shall be, as is the nature of our sex, not a little impatient. But one thing I must add, the whole shall be an absolute secret, for I know that some of you would be extremely mortished by the fear of criticism. These are only broken hints, and I shall gladly listen to any improvements that may be offered; but let us hear them now, and after that not a word more till Monday. Reviews and repetitions would serve only to perplex, and render that a toil which would be otherwise a pleasure.

Your ladyship feems to have let flip one particular, returned Beaumont, which it will be very necessary to adjust, and that is the order which must be observed in the relation, for otherwise I forefee that the ceremonial will not be eafily fettled. Without difficulty, replied lady Confantia, we will hear the gentlemen and ladies alternately, and as to the order among themfelves it shall be determined by chance. We will fix upon a few fictitious names (the fame that are used in this introduction) you shall write them in feparate billets, and put them in those two china basons, from whence I will draw them one by one, and I dare fay each will be contented with the place, which fortune shall affign in this lottery of wit. This expedient being approved the billets were deposited, and the company parted well fatisfied, except that they were full as impatient for the arrival of Monday night as her ladyship, who, in truth, aimed at nothing more than to give employment to their thoughts, and by fuggesting a train of new

new ideas, to banish those frightful fancies that baunted some of their imaginations, and troubled that harmony of soul, which from their virtue and good sense they would otherwise have

possessed.

It is fcarce to be conceived with how great ardour our illustrious Malecontents applied themfelves to their new task. The defire of pleasing is natural to ingenious minds, and when it is once awaken'd, puts all the inferior faculties in motion; and has the same effect upon the intellects that winds have upon the air, fhifting, flirring, and purifying all at once. They were upin the morning, dreffed, and bufy, hours before their usual time; and as the exercise of the soul has full as frong operations on the human frame as that of the body, to inflead of being fatigued, they found themselves infinitely refreshed by it, appeared with unufual livelines at table, and were complimented by their acquaintance, who came to dine or Jup at lady Conftantia's, upon their florid state of health, and the brifteness of their spirits. In short the spleen was entirely banished, and their evening convertations were fo lively, that the good lady could not help applauding herfelf on the admirable effects of her medicine.

The secrecy she recommended was wonderfully well kept, except that Beaumont was their common confident, each having consented to his exemption, from a tacit design of consulting him; and he managed with so much dexterity, and adjusted his visits with such discretion, that none of them had the least suspicion, that he was privy to any performance but their own. This afforded him frequent opportunities of en-

couraging and supporting that alacrity, which might have been otherwise by the ladies abated, through diffidence or fatigue. He knew how to address his discourses to their respective humours, so as to give each the proper spur, and prevent their lagging through the course. In these employments they were all equally pleased, the authors with that hopes of success which must inspire every tolerable composition, and their common friend with his own speculations on human nature, in which he placed his chief

delight.

Surface (Society

By Saturday noon the actors were all perfect in their parts, and on Monday evening, as foon as supper was over, lady Constantia retired to her parlour, proper orders having been given to the servants to prevent any interruption, and when the company were seated, after acknowledging how sensible she was of the obligation conferred upon her, by so kind, so ready, and so punctual a compliance with her request, told Sir Lawrence that it was from him they were to have that night's entertainment. He rose and bowed, took his seat again, and after a sew minutes respection proceeded thus.

felly well to enough from a common aded was wonder.

felly well to a competition decreased was their

common or common and common at common of common or their

that common to make an example common of common or their

part of the common and an example common or their common of their common or their

to the existing second cape on similar angle included the



THE

OBSTINATE GENOESE;

OR,

The amazing Adventures of

SIGNIOR SALARDO,

An ITALIAN HISTORY.



T will not certainly furprize you, that an old man should tell you an old story, which yet may be worth your hearing, and perhaps dwell as long on your memory, as it has done on mine. Let the

herd of mankind fay what they will, some things are the better, or at least not the worse for being old. A very wise prince was wont to say, that old maxims were to be remembred, old books to be read, and old friends to be revered, by such as meant to live happily and die in peace. Upon recollection he added to these two more, less weighty indeed but no less true, that old wood is best to burn, and old wine to drink.

The obstinate Genoese; or, drink. To his authority let me add a verse that I have fomewhere met with.

Youth may have wit but wisdom dwells with age.

There resided in the famous city of Genoa, I cannot precifely tell you when, a man of family and fortune named Rinaldo Scala, who after a long life fpent with as much felicity as the state of fublunary things will allow, found himself in a declining state, and prudently called to mind that change which all must undergo. He had an only fon named Salardo, to whom he had given a liberal and polite education. He left him, as to whom elfe should he leave it? his whole estate, but that the notary might take fome pains in making his will, he recommended to this fon of his, three rules which he charged him never to transgress. The first was, that how well foever he might love his wife, he should never trust her with a secret. The second, that he should never think of breeding up another man's fon as his own; and the last, that he should never settle in a place where a prince governed by no law, but that of his will. Having performed this necessary work, and bestowed with a heart full of paternal tenderness his departing bleffing on his fon he breathed his laft. and left Salardo in the full possession of a large and fplendid fortune.

Young men in his circumstances seldom suffer much embarraffment from real grief, tho' they are fometimes perplexed enough to mainsain the appearances of forrow which they do not feel. Salardo did not endure much even from thefe, but within a short time after his

father's

The Adventures of Signior Salardo. 19

rfe

70.

02,

fa-

ho

25

nd

ed

0.

m

Ie

. 3

ze

ed

bs

at

d

at

er

e

e

-

d

,

e.

father's funerals were performed, began to look abroad for a wife, and in his fituation, met with no great difficulty in finding one. Her name was Theodora, the daughter of Signior Odeschalchi Doria, to whom in point of birth or beauty no exception could be taken, tho' she was not quite fo happy in point of fortune. The marriage was quickly concluded, as quickly folemnized, and tho' her temper was fomewhat haughty, yet Salardo was passionately fond, and not content with loving her as he ought, he adored her to a degree of madness. In this manner he paffed feveral years without feeling any want, except that of children, which however his wife regretted more than he; for fo much he was enamoured of her, that while she remained his, and he could gratify her wishes, he had fcarce any of his own.

But at length, to content her, and in that respect to please himself, he ventured to break one of his father's rules, by adopting the fon of an indigent widow, whose name was Posthumus. The boy had nothing in him that could excite any extraordinary affection or dislike. His perfon was tolerable, and in that had the better of his parts. As he grew up however, he learned to flatter Theodora, who had an exceeding kindness for him, and at length induced her obedient husband, with less difficulty than the herfelf expected, to go through with his wife work, and to declare him the heir of all his fortune, in case he left none by her. Salardo applauded himself when he had taken this step, and felt fuch a complacency for this adopted heir apparent, that every thing he faid had wit, and every thing he did was right; in which

having

having the concurrence of Theodora, he neither regarded the complaints of his relations, nor troubled himself at the murmurs of the people, who tho' they fometimes mistake in circumstances, are commonly right in the main, and very rarely cry fire, without perceiving some smoke. But Theodora and Posthumus were alarmed, she was impatient at the reports she heard, and the boy distracted, to find that none paid him respect, but his father's domestics, and amongst them, some of the oldest did it but aukwardly. They concurred therefore in whispering in Salardo's ears, that it was a fine thing to travel, and that a person of his rank and riches, should look abroad and see the world. Admirable advice, to one, who had

managed fo well at home!

The intreaties of Posthumus, or the wishes of Theodora had been fufficient to determine our noble Genoese to quit his country, when united they threw him into a violent hurry. He converted his pictures and furniture into money, called in the fums that his father had prudently placed out at good interest on the best securities, and having provided rich cloaths for his lady and his fon, and delivered into the custody of the former a cabinet of valuable jewels, he left Genoa with an equipage that looked like that of an ambassador. The road he took was that of Piedmont, of which when he had examined the beauties and curiofities, and his two counsellors seemed to be as much tired with them, as they had ever been with the ffately edifices of Genoa, he put all his houshold again in motion, and fet out with the fame eagerness as at first, and with the same view, that

The Adventures of Signior Salardo. 21 that of finding a place with which Theodora and Posthumus would be content.

He next entered the marquifate of Montferrat, a country neither large nor rich, where the people were aftonished at the splendour of his train, and paid a kind of adoration to the magnificence of his family. This pleafed Salardo not a little, and at the fame time ravished Theodora and Posthumus. They declared the people of Montferrat the civilest and most polite in the universe, not discerning that indigence is the schoolmistress of flattery, and that the high respect paid them flowed not from any notions of their merit, but from the advantages derived from their expence. Without troubling themselves however with reflections, they pressed Salardo to continue where he was, the land of praise being ever a paradise in the estimation of fools; and tho' our noble Genoese was not of their number, yet being governed by those who were, he thought it so too, and resolved to honour Montferrat with his refidence fo long as his family continued in this humour.

One circumstance that contributed not a little to give Salardo himself a high relish of his new situation, was the kind reception he met with at court. The Marquiss of Montserrat was young and gay, devoted himself entirely to the sports of the field, and the pleasures of the palace. His subjects were poor, because he raised and consumed in a great measure the fruits of their labour; for tho' his dominions were small, and his force not great, yet from the circumstances of Italy in those days, he was as despotic as an Asian monarch. He was mightily taken with Salardo's humour, as well

as highly pleafed with the figure he made, which did some credit to his little court, and therefore. he was always of his parties, rode fide by fide when they went a hunting, and fat next him at publick feasts; nay, had access to his cabinet, and had a share in his councils. This grandeur had still a stronger influence on Theodora and Posthumus, and while it inflated the heart of

Salardo, it absolutely turned their heads.

This glittering scene continued so long without the least interruption, our Genoese made so many friends, was fo much the darling of the people, and flood in fo high a degree of favour with the Marquifs, that he feemed to have abfolutely changed his flation, and from being a stranger in the country, and at the court, to be, and that in a short time too, the director at least, if not the master, of the Marquisate of Montferrat. It is no wonder that he was dazled with this furprizing fortune, or that drinking daily full draughts of prosperity, he should grow inebriated by degrees, and lofe the little fense he had. It fell out even so, Salardo's sentiments were totally changed, all diffidence of his own conduct was wore off, and feeling himfelf as he thought most happy, he concluded from thence that he must be one of the wifest of men. Occupied with these thoughts, as he fat alone in his closet, he started up with all the enthulialm of a player, and uttered the following foliloguy in the fulness of his heart.

"At half the age of my father how comes " it that I furpass him in prudence? what fine

" rules he left for my conduct, and what a "different figure, had I purfued them, must I

" therefore

[&]quot; have made? nature denied me a child, and

The Adventures of Signior Salardo. 23

"therefore I was to deny myfelf one. But at " the request of Theodora I chose Posthumus. " A most hopeful youth he is modest, gen-" tle, well bred, knowing, and to affectionate " to me, that the world regards him, as the " fon of my body, and not of my choice. Then, " because Signior Rinaldo lived and died a ci-" tizen, I must do so too. Beware of going " into any Prince's dominions, beware of ab-" folute power! poor man, he little thought I " fhould share it. Thus far I have succeeded. " but for the fidelity of my wife, that is indu-"bitable. However I'll try it, not for my " own, but for the fake of younger men, to " prevent their being hoodwinked, bound and " embarrassed; as but for my own good sense, " I might have been, by the dying whimfies of " a dreaming dotard. It shall be so, I will " put Salardo's fagacity out of question,"

The worst resolutions are commonly the foonest carried into execution, and our Genoese having formed this, threw himself immediately out of doors, in order to carry it into practice. He went directly to the palace, and having at all times free access, entered the faulkner's apartment, and hid under his cloak the Marques's favourite hawk, which he convey'd instantly to the lodgings of Signior Francisco, beseeching him out of respect to the friendship that was between them, to keep it fafe till fuch time as he heard from him. Signior Francisco was a courtier, yet a man of honour, and a friend to our Genoese. He did what he was desired without making any reply, and Salardo highly pleafed with his fine exploit returned home. Then with equal privacy, he took a young hawk of his own, and having broke the neck of the bird, hid it cautiously beneath his cloak, and with an air of confusion and impatience, hastily entered the apartment of Theodora, whom he found employed in dreffing for the courtly di-

versions in the afternoon.

As foon as the faw Salardo, the difmiffed her maids, and taking him by the hand which she kissed, my Lord, my honoured Lord, said she, what means that diffurbance I read in your looks, the haftiness of your approach, and this tremor in your limbs? To which Salardo with eyes full of tenderness replied, my dearest Theodora thou knowest, that fince we came to Montferrat, the Marquiss, what with his huntings, hawkings, feaftings, tournaments, and malques, has kept us in fuch continual emotion, that I do not know whether I am dead or alive. I have play'd him fuch a trick, as I believe will procure us fome respite, or at least reprieve us from hawking for a while; tho' if he knew it, I doubt it would put both his kindness, and his patience to the test. Bless me, returned Theodora, what is it, Salardo, you have done? She Tooke these words with such a visible concern, that Salardo was convinced of her affection, and almost repented his having put it to the trial.

I'll tell thee, my dearest, continued he, I have killed the finest falcon that he had, which he valued more then all the rest, and the loss of which will make him distracted. He then drew the hawk from under his cloak, and giving it to Theodora; let it be dreffed, faid he, for dinner, and let us eat it for the fake of the Marquis. The lady feeing the hawk, and confiderd

C - 4

r

e 2,

ır is

h

t-

3,

s,

I

ıt

11

15

t,

is

)-

ie

1,

1,

e

I

h

of

W

it

ומ

-

-

g

ing what he had faid, altered her brow, and began to reproach him: I cannot imagine, faid the, how you could do fuch a thing to my Lord Marquis, who has always had fuch an affection for you. He never refused you any request, you have been always confidered next to himfelf in his court. Alas Salardo! should he come to the knowledge of this, what would be your fate? bless me! for ought I know he might take your life! but how shall he know it, replied Salardo, will you tell him? this is a fecret between us two, never fuffer it to escape your lips, fince as you rightly judge it may prove my ruin and Trouble not yourfelf about that, faid the, it shall remain ever in my breast, I will fuffer a thousand and a thousand deaths, rather than it should be drawn from thence.

In that moment Salardo's joy was compleat, and he thought within himself, that his own prudence and his father's folly were now manifest to a degree of demonstration. The hawk was dreffed, and when ready Salardo and Theodora fat down to table. He eat himself, and pressed her to eat, but it was in vain. She pouted, looked on him with difdain, and replied to all his intreaties, with fo much tartness and contempt, that at length he was provoked to give her a blow on the cheek, upon which she started from the table, flounced out of the room. and told him, that he should feel that blow longer than she had done. Her threatnings were not without effect. The next morning the went to court, and from a high spirit of duty and gratitude, as she pretended, told all to the Marquis; who caused Salardo to be seized, and in the first transport of his passion (a thing worthy of an VOL, I. arbitrary

arbitrary Prince) pronounced this judgment, that Salardo should be hanged, and all he had confif-.cated. But as avarice was not amongst the number of his vices, he directed these effects should be divided into three parts; one of which he beflowed on Theodora, another on Posthumus, and gave the third to the person who should persorm the execution.

The news of this extraordinary decision no fooner reached the ears of Posthumus, who was now become a lufty youth, active and vigorous, but without any thing genteel, either in his perfon or his manners, than he flew to Theodora. You have heard, my dear lady, faid he, the fentence that the Marquis has passed upon Salardo, will it not be right in me to defire the post of executioner? Without doubt child, answered she, for then we shall have the whole succession. When a thing must be done, what fignifies who does it? you and I shall then have all, and this unlucky affair will be no prejudice to the innocent. Go Posthumus, go without delay to the Marquis; he is too good and too prudent a Prince, to refuse you fo small, and at the same time fo reasonable a favour.

Posthumus lost no time in making his application, and as Theodora rightly forefaw, it was granted without difficulty. In the mean time, Salardo fent to his friend, and gave him his instructions, but however not without some apprehension, that he had pushed things a little too far, and that after all he might be the victim, as well as he was already the dupe of his own contrivance. He was now alone, in one of the vilest rooms of a stinking prison, loaden with irons, and abandoned by all the world; thoroughly wiertične

[-

1-

d

-

d

m

10

as

S,

r-

a.

1-

0,

of

e,

n.

10

is

0-

he

a

rie

li-

ras

ne,

n-

re-

00

as n-

he

ith

10.

hly

roughly fensible of his own folly, and less afflicted with the dread of what might happen, and which it was more than probable would happen, than with the remembrance of things passed, and the means by which he had brought himself into this sad dilemma. These gloomy restections having rolled some hours in his mind, forced a passage at last, and burst forth in words to this effect.

"I am convinced, now it is too late, as well " of my father's prudence, as affection. old man! his riches were but half my for-" tune, happy if I had known how to have va-" lued precepts of fuch mighty price. He bid " me beware of domestic enemies, I made them " my only counfellors. He bid me detest the " courts of Princes, who governed by their will; " I fancied that I might be fafe when I had " gained an ascendancy over that will. False " to my own interest, cruel to my relations, " abandoning my native country, what could I " expect but what I feel? Unfaithful wife! in-" human fon! ingrateful Marquis! who for a " hawk would facrifice a friend. How true is " our faying at Genoa, that the love of Princes " is like new wine, maukishly sweet in the " morning, and yet four before night? But why " do I blame them, when my own folly made " them wicked? If I had not confided, I could " not have been betrayed; if I had not believed " without grounds, I should not have been de-" ceived; and if I had not doated on grandeur, "I had never met perdition."

At this very inftant came his fon Posthumus, with his whole retinue of the officers of justice, and with equal decency and duty bespoke him thus. " Father, fince nothing can prevent your

" being hanged this day, according to my lord " Marquis's pleasure, and as the third part of vour effects is to be given to him, who performs the office of hangman, I believe it will not displease you, that I do it myself, for in that case, not a pennyworth of yours will be moved out of the house, but will all become " ours, which knowing the kindness and good-" ness of your disposition, I doubt not will af-" ford you much fatisfaction." Salardo, who listened to him very attentively, replied, " It is " mighty well, my fon, this to be fure is a strong " proof of your good understanding, and how " much diffatisfied soever I might be before, " this circumstance, without question, will recon-" cile me to my fate. Lose no more time then, 66 but proceed to your business." Posthumus accordingly, after the usual ceremonies, led him forth with the cord about his neck, and furrounded by the officers, conducted him to the place of execution. Salardo finding the ladder placed against the gibbet ascended backwards, step by step, and when he was near the top, with a steady countenance and firm voice, told his story to the people fuccincily, but punctually, humbly defiring pardon for all his faults, and exhorting them to live virtuously, and religiously, but more especially pressed the duty of children obeying their parents, and that young men would not too foon rely on their own abilities, but remember that their fathers having feen more, might probably be wifer than themselves, and at all events could have no interest in deceiving them by their dying instructions. His discourse softened the minds of the audience extremely, they could not indeed reverse the sentence, nor durft they

The Adventures of Signior Salardo. 29

they murmur at it, yet they gave free vent to their compassion, believing that there was no

treason in their tears.

rd

of

ms

ot

nat

be

ne

d-

af-

ho

is

ng

WC

re,

n-

en,

us

im

id-

ace

ced

by

dy

the

de-

ing

ore

ing

not

m-

ght

all

em

oft-

ney

irft

iey

While this strange scene was exhibited in the great square, another almost as extraordinary passed in the palace, where Signior Francisco threw himself at the Marquis's feet, befeeching him to disclose the cause why Salardo, who had flood fo high in his favour, should be fo fuddenly doomed to a shameful death. The Marquis, whose eyes were red with vengeance, whose countenance was inflamed with paffion, and who confidered this enquiry as an outrage on his authority; answered in an angry tone, he dies for his infolence, for abufing my goodness, and for his arrogant ingratitude, in killing my favourite hawk. But he dies unheard, added Francisco, upon a flight accufation, and yet upon my life he is innocent of the fact. Innocent! cried the Marquis with a glance of indignation, for this impeachment of my justice, you deserve to share his fate. Rise and retire this moment, or resolve to end your days with him on a gibbet. My Lord, answered Francisco, if you think that the proper reward of my long and faithful fervices, I am not afraid to die. Grant him but an hour's reprieve, fend for him hither, and if his innocence does not appear, let your vengeance take its course.

The Marquis was aftonished at his firmness, but not in the least altered in his sentiment. grant your request, faid he, bring Salardo hither this moment. But Francisco be it at your peril, I shall severely chastise this attachment to a stranger, in prejudice to that faith, which as a fubject you owe to me. That faith, replied Francisco.

cisco, obliged me to speak. The love your anceftors had for justice, gave you this power of doing wrong. It is for your fake, as well as his, that I interpose, and that you may henceforward learn, not to give fuch credit to appearances, as to condemn before you have fifted out the truth. The strangeness of the fact required the strongest degree of proof. You believed that he had merit, otherwife you would not have preferred him. In a moment your passion destroys that fentiment, which was the refult of your reason, and you conceive him guilty of what, if he had the least merit, could never enter into his mind. At this rate, my Lord, who can you trust,

or who will trust you?

It was impossible for the Marquis to refift entirely the force of these suggestions, and by degrees they made fuch an impression, as began to calm his thoughts, and bring his mind into a better frame. But when Salardo appeared with the rope about his neck, the hangman Posthumus by his fide, and the officers of justice at his heels, all his refentment revived, and shewed itself in his looks and gestures. He remained however filent; and only made a fign to Salardo, when he drew near, that he should speak. " My Lord," faid he, making a profound obeifance, " the fervices " that I have formerly rendered you, and the " fincere affection I always had for your person, " did not deferve fuch a return, as covering me

" thus with shame, and exposing me to a vio-" lent and ignominious death. The folly of " which I was guilty, could not be fo heinous

" a crime, if folly be a crime at all, as to pro-" voke so severe a punishment. I took your

" hawk, it is true, but not to keep or to hurt

cc it,

it, Francisco will be my witness," who at that instant produced the hawk upon his fift. " I " took it for a foolish purpose, which it has fa-" tally answered." He then repeated his adventures, his contempt for his father's advice, his excessive complacency for Theodora, and his ill placed affection for Posthumus. The Marquis looking upon his hawk, and feeing it fat and fair, and then upon Salardo; at length caft his eyes upon the ground till he had done fpeaking, when the whole affembly expected his determination.

On this turning towards Salardo, the tears falling down his cheeks, If it was possible, faid he, that you could look into my foul, you would perceive that the cord with which you are still dishonoured, has not grieved you more than it afflicts me, because that power which was the instrument of my fury, fails me in the defire I have to do you justice; and after having fo ill repaid your fidelity and affection, I cannot efface the remembrance of what has paffed, by making you as happy as I made you miserable. But what I can I will. At these words he leaped from his seat, and taking off the cord with his own hands from his neck and arms, threw it upon Posthumus, whom the officers immediately bound. kiffing the cheek of Salardo, he led him to his feat, and placed him on his right hand, intreated his forgiveness, and promised him all the favours it was in his power to bestow. As for that ingrateful miscreant, said he, take him and hang him on the same gibbet, where he would have hanged his father. Our compassionate Genoese would by no means fuffer this. Son Posthumus, faid he, come hither; he trembling obeyed, and C 4 threw

MISTELL

threw himself at his feet. Hitherto, continued Salardo, I have cherished thee as my only child. What I shall do with thee now I know not. Heaven only can tell what will be thy lot hereafter. On the one hand, the affection I have born thee inclines me to pardon; on the other, the brutality of thy nature forbids me to spare thee. Thy unnatural ingratitude renders thee unworthy of mercy; and yet the punishment thou hast merited must not come from me. Take then that cord that is about thy neck, in lieu of that inheritance thou might'st have enjoyed. Let the remembrance of me pursue thee for this usage, and by a speedy flight escape what may otherwise attend that resentment, which the fight, and even the name of thee must ever provoke.

The voice of the people quickly proclaimed the catastrophe of this strange business, which no fooner came to the ears of Theodora, than she fled to a convent, where through a fullen fense of shame, rather than any due remorfe for her crime, she quickly wore out her days; despised and detefted by those, who had flattered her pride in the time of her prosperity, and who were the first to load her with reproaches, and to upbraid her with that inconstancy and ingratitude, which had brought her husband so near his death, and herfelf to an untimely end. Salardo however took care that she should not want either maintenance while she lived, or affistance in her last moments, charging the confesfor who attended her, to let her know, that he heartily forgave her, and pitied her misfortunes with more fincerity, than she had ever thewn for him, from the time of their marriage.

The Adventures of Signior Salardo. 33

He caused her corps to be decently interred, and bountifully rewarded, according to their several degrees, the women she had brought with her from Genoa; admonishing them never to remember their lady's failings, but in order to correct their own.

In a short time after her decease, Salardo took leave of the Marquis, in order to return to his own country. That Lord laboured in vain to prevent it, by offering all that the possession of Montferrat could enable him to bestow. Salardo told him, that his family fuffered by his absence, and nothing could so effectually console his grief, as the fight of that city, in which he was born; and that having given fo great a part of his life to the gratification of his humours and his passions, it was time to dedicate the rest to nobler purposes. Signior Francisco, to whom the separation was no less grievous, joined his follicitations to the Marquis, admitting that Salardo's reasons were well grounded, to which his master at length yielded but with regret. However he loaded him with presents, amongst which the most acceptable was his picture, and assured him that no distance should remove the remembrance of his fervices, or weaken the kindness that he professed. Francisco and many other Lords of the court accompanied him a day's journey, and by the tenderness they shewed at parting, manifested the reality of their esteem.

On his return to Genoa, Salardo inclined to enter into a monastery, and to pass the remainder of his days in exercises of piety. But some of his nearest relations prevailed upon him to alter his resolution. They were acquainted with

C 5

the reputation he had acquired, by putting on a proper foundation the revenue of the Montferrat, and at their request he fought, in the administration of publick affairs, to divert that melancholy, which would certainly have devoured him in a retreat. He affifted and provided for many of his friends, educated the children of his relations in his house, and divided his estate amongst them by his will. By way of penance for his former disobedience, he caused a magnificent tomb to be erected to his father's memory, and having reached an advanced age, as well as the highest honours of the commonwealth, he directed, on his deathbed, that his corps should

- be interred at his father's feet.

Thus ends my flory, faid Sir Lawrence, and like most of those told by people in years, has, I doubt, rather exercised your patience, than satisfied your expectations. Yet be affured of this, that I have made as much of it as I could. You may possibly think, that in some passages it deviates from probability. It may be fo. I would be very loth to vouch for the truth of all that it contains. Permit me however to observe, that the manners of Italy differ from those of England, and that the customs of past times, are not entirely the fame with those of our own, in any country. The passions of Italians, tho' not so lively, are more lafting than ours, and produce much stronger effects. Besides all this, in such kind of relations, that exactness which is requifite in history is out of the case; and as painters and poets, fo the authors of moral fictions, think themselves at liberty to colour pretty strongly, that their pieces may have life and force fufficient to make an impression on the memory,

as well as to perfuade the understanding; and provided the sentiment be right, I think in this

they are not to blame.

H

r

f

e

-

,

e

d

d

,

-

3,

u

d

at

at

ot

y

O

ce

h

i-

rs

S,

ce y,

25

It may be, should I attempt this, my success, as a philosopher, might be inferior to that with which I have performed the task your ladyship thought fit to impose. But still why do we say that nature does nothing in vain? if we deny fome good qualities to be the fruits of age. Why should nature make men older, if they be no wifer: it is plain that their strength, their activity, their vivacity decays, but is this quite fo plain with respect to their judgment? If it was, to what end do they live uneasy to themselves, and unpleafant to others? One word more, if this be the fact, and old men, like rotten trees, are useless above ground, when was this discovery made? not in former times, prophets, poets, and historians witness the contrary. Neither does this humour univerfally prevail; in some countries men are incapacitated from filling the first offices of the state till so far advanced in years, that here they would be thought fit for no office at all. You perceive, my friends, that these matters have been often the subject of my meditations, and no doubt you will think them much fitter for those, than to be commemorated by the mufes. Her ladyship's commands however were (and I am not .yet fo decrepid as to disobey them) that our discourses should conclude with verfe. Mine may be none of the best, neither are they clad in a modern garb, but however you shall hear them, whether they make you ferious or merry.

rent Ston Progen

I

Yon short liv'd trees, that deck our brooks with green, On Mountains, tufts, on plains our fairest groves; What can they furnish, but a soothing scene, For idle pastimes or for wanton loves?

With worthier pride our golden orchards rife,
Where various fruits for taste and beauty vie;
Delight our hearts as well as chear our eyes,
Groves, pleasure only; orchards, wealth supply.

To forests old, yet groves and orchards yield,
Where verdant oaks thro' length of ages grow;
Whose branches wide o'erspread the spacious field,
Their bodies cloath'd with sacred misseltoe.

In them our DRUIDS 'erst sought heaven's high will,

Fleets, temples, houses, they afford us still.

alongial silving

Useless the colt, with ragged coat and bare, Roams o'er the common with unsettl'd pace; The manag'd steed is long prepar'd for war, And full ag'd coursers, only sit the race.

The lion whelp is but of kitling fize,
More like to raise contempt, than dread or pain;
"Till time at length the royal beast supplies,
With strength enormous and with shaggy mane,

Sly reynard's cubs are oft themselves a prey, As wanting force to fight or strength to fly; 'Till by example taught from day to day, They gain at last egregious subtilty.

Feeble in youth, the whole brute-race appears, Their fleetness, force and fraud, succeed with years.

In man alas! the case is much the same, Not more in wit, and as to vigour, lefs; The parent's care the growing child must frame, While in obedience rests its happiness.

Than wisdom, strength, is of the quicker growth, And passions sooner much, than prudence rise; Hence youth unruly to Submission loth, Runs its own course, till from experience wife.

But age's baldness sacred mitres hide, The venerable judge dispenses laws; An boary chieftain is the army's pride, In senates, length of years attracts applause,

With reason then, thus sweetly sung the sage, Youth may have wit, but wifdom dwells with age.

Lady Constantia, when Sir Lawrence had finished, rose up, and with her usual courtesy thanked him, as well for the evening's entertainment, as for the various marks of personal respect which he had shewn. She added, that the found herself restrained from saying more upon the subject, by falling in some measure within

1/4

within the compass of it, fince the common prejudices were still stronger against old women, than against old men. In one thing, Madam, faid Captain Courtly, your ladyship will distinguish, that whereas some of our sex pride themfelves in the prerogative of age, the ladies are fo humble, as to defend themselves from being thought old as long as they can. I doubt, Sir, returned Mrs. Anguish, there is a little of malice in that observation, and that groundless too, for whatever provocation our fex may have given you, I perfuade myself, it came not from those advanced in years. I must confess, added Miss Charlotte, I understood Captain Courtly quite otherwise, and apprehended his sense to be, that women were less inclined to assume that prerogative, and therefore found it less disputed. In my judgment, faid Mr. Pensive, you were in the right, for certainly the fact speaks in your favour, fince power is always best obeyed, when it is least shewn, or in other words, least infifted upon.

I fancy by your looks, faid lady Constantia, addressing herself to Calista, you have a mind to speak. Truly, Madam, replied she blushing, if I durst, I should be a little inquisitive, whether in nature there ever were any fuch characters as Theodora and Posthumus? certainly, added Sir Lawrence, there have been fuch characters, if there be any degree of truth in ancient histories, or in late ones; and if the evening were not fo far fpent, bad as my memory is, I could furnish you with some from both. But at another time, young lady, we will discuss this point, at present permit me to put you in mind, that there are bad men, and bad women, in all de-

grees of relation or circumstances, but this carries no reflection on either of the fexes, which your own objection will make you eafily perceive; because if such examples were not singular and extraordinary, none could think them incredible. Let me add one thing more, that to fet them in their proper, that is in the most hideous light possible, is the most effectual method

to prevent their becoming common.

It begins to grow late, interposed Mr. Beaumont, and we ought not to trespass on the lady's hours. Sir Lawrence has acquitted himself with great force and judgment, yet I make no doubt that to morrow evening, the spirit and vivacity of that lady (bowing to Mrs. Anguish) will in fome measure efface the memory of his performance. All the company approved the hint that he had given, and after a few reciprocal compliments, and concerting the means of withdrawing without being rude, to fuch as were excluded from this literary affembly, they retired immediately to their respective apartments. a bigological reversions of the Corflesion of

then to all who were readers, thousands o'there in the granders. The other I even to spain beltthis empreed to and the selection of policine vacu. when here and the control of the state of the dence, that I have obered updayed abalistics, and cargaged and businessay, thought to being per out? which! I have box your chared make rele . relief Berleit Sp. Wallet Long, There went to wine into beneat the late of the range boundaries and vont a tengonic de lave que le company profess en

es en relation of directoristics to to

THE

MARVELLOUS DISCOVERY;

OR.

Innocence rescued from the Grave.

Out of the SPANISH.

S foon as the company were met, and manifested by their looks with what impatience they expected the amusement of the night, Mrs. Anguish rose from her seat, and after

a profound reverence to lady Constantia, and then to all who were present, she broke silence in these words. The duty I owe to your ladyship's commands, and the desire of obliging those who hear me, have prevailed over that diffidence, that I have of my weak abilities, and engaged me to translate, from a language with which I have been long converfant, a relation very extraordinary, and which if it had fallen into better hands, might have been worthy of your attention. I have chosen to preserve the author's method, who speaks throughout in the first person, and whose performance seems to eftablifh Innocence rescued from the Grave. 4t establish this maxim, more especially necessary in some nations, but meriting respect in all,

An hasty judgment long repentance draws.

I fet out from Milan with a defign to have proceeded to Venice. In order to lessen the fatigue of the journey, by changing the manner of conveyance, I took water, after agreeing with my muletier to meet me again at a certain village, but the fellow disappointed me, so that when I came thither, neither finding him, nor being able to procure horse or mule, I was obliged to make a virtue of necessity, and to continue my route on foot. In this piteous plight I traversed, the best part of the day, the fertile plains of Lombardy, with a heart none of the most chearful; and when the light began to decline, faw an open country before me, without knowing how or where to find a place, in which I might rest my head. At some confiderable diffance I perceived a cavalier croffing the road with a hawk upon his fift. He likewise faw me, and stopped to give me time to come up, which tho' I used my best endeavours, was not very quickly done; for having travelled fo many hours, it was no longer in my power to make much dispatch.

As foon as I drew pretty near him, he asked me if I was not a Spanish soldier, to which when I had answered that he was not mistaken, he of his own accord, and as if he had divined what distress I was in, told me, that I had yet a long way to go, before I could find a lodging, but that if I would follow him, to a country house which he had in the neighbourhood, he would

accommodate

42 The marvellous Discovery; or,

accommodate me till the next morning. Tho' the fettled melancholy that fat upon his countenance feemed no very good omen, my own condition would by no means permit me to refuse his offer. Indeed I was the more willing to accept it, as knowing that with persons of distinction, such as he appeared, and such as he really was, there was no fear of ill usage; which was more then I could promise myself in any other place. I plucked up my spirits therefore, and obeyed his orders, with as much chearfulness and vigour as I could; the hopes of speedy refreshment alleviating, in some measure, the

sense of present fatigue.

A garden lay before his dwelling, which was large and well disposed, but in very bad order. The grass was of a considerable height, the walks unswept, and all things in so strange a state, that it had the air of a place, which had been for fome time abandoned. When we were just at the door, three or four fervants came out to meet us, with dejected looks, indifferently dreffed, wildness in their eyes, and without speaking a word. The house, when we were in it, appeared handsome and well furnished, and yet in a disorder, that agreed perfectly with the melancholy appearance of its owner, and his attendants. A spectacle so extraordinary affected me with fome disquiet, and I was perfectly at a loss what to make of all I faw. The gentleman feemed to be funk under a load of grief, that he was equally unable to throw off or fustain. He fcarce gave any directions to his domestics, and when he did, it was by gestures, nods, and signs, accompanied with a kind of fierceness, which was by no means agreeable to an ignorant spectator.

0

2-

'n

e-

ıg

of

he

ch

ny

e,

ıldv

he

vas

er. lks

hat for

at

to

ed,

ga

red

dif-

annts.

vith

hat

ned

was

rce

hen

ac-

was

or. At

At last supper was served in, of which, to fay the truth, I never had greater need, as having tafted nothing fince morning; and for this reason I eat very heartily, notwithstanding the dismal figure of my host, and of his servants, without fo much as a word spoken, while we were at table; fo that I began to fancy myfelf in the refectory of a Carthulian convent, where filence is the rule of the order. Yet strange as it was, my appetite made this scene much more supportable than it would have been otherwise.

It feemed to me to make no part of my duty to begin the conversation, that rather belonged to him, if he thought proper; when one is in the house of a stranger, and more especially of a person of superior quality, it is requisite to accommodate one's felf to his humour, and above all not to pry into his affairs. If fuch people are gay, or if they are fad, one ought to suppose, that the former has its reasons, and that the latter is not without grounds, but what these may be is not a stranger's business to enquire. You may be fure, my thoughts were taken up with something all this time, and you might be curious to know what; if you were, that curiofity is fatiffied, my filence and its causes accounted for, and now let us proceed with the story.

After fupper was over, and the fervants were gone out of the room, the gentleman remained no longer mute, but with a low hollow voice pronounced these words, fighing between whiles. " Happy, happy, they! who are born in an ob-

[&]quot; fcure condition, who pass their lives, whether " well or ill, without ever troubling themselves " what others fay or think of them. The poor

[&]quot; foldier, when he comes from duty, goes and

44 The marvellous Discovery; or,

" lays himfelf down to fleep without any farther care; one may fay the same of every la-66 bourer and mechanick, who fulfills the law of " nature, toils that he may enjoy repose, and " enjoys his repose, when the toil of the day is "done. But alas! it is not fo with persons " of distinction, with those whom birth and for-"tune have raised to a superior station, and there-66 by fixed in a more conspicuous point of light; " they have the public for their judges, and as " many to pass censure upon their actions, as " thought proper to turn their eyes upon what " they did. By this means, they are made the " fubject of their murmurs, are the victims of " their calumnies, and exposed to have their " characters affaffinated, by fuch as are accuf-" tomed to take every thing in the worst sense, " and to report their own conjectures as in-" contestable facts."

Then turning himself towards me, I am defirous, Sir, continued he, of feeking fome relief from that load of forrow, with which I am oppressed, by laying open to you the sad subject of my grief; not that I am in any want of friends, into whose bosom I might fafely pour the melancholy story of my misfortunes; but what I have to tell you is of a nature, one would rather relate to a stranger, than to persons that one fees every day, and whom we must have thence forward a kind of perpetual witnesses of one's mifery and confusion. But first let me inform you, that there is not fo much as a fingle domestic of mine acquainted with the motive of my affliction, and if you fee them mournful and dejected, their forrow is but the reflection of mine, they know not whence it fprings.

d

15

r-

e-

t;

as

as

at he

of

eir uf-

se, in-

de-

ream

ect

ids,

meat I

rathat

nave s of

in-

ngle

e of

and

a of

I

I am next to tell you, Sir, that I am fufficiently provided with the gifts of fortune, to live in a state of perfect happiness, if that stood in any connection with riches. My inclinations never led me to frequent the great world, or to aim at public employments. I love the folitude of the country, and have hitherto fpent my days in exercises, not unworthy a gentleman. A little husbandry, a little gardening, fishing, hunting, and hawking, have been my agreeable amusements for many years. Besides these, I have constantly kept a pretty good table, to which strangers, who passed this way, were always welcome, and their conversation much more than compensated, in my opinion, the expence. The first part of my youth was passed in this manner, without fo much as a thought of marriage, which I considered as a burthen, rather too weighty for my shoulders, and altogether incompatible with that manner of life which I had chosen, and in which hitherto I had experienced fo much peace and pleafure.

But as there is no way to avoid the stroke of destiny, it happened one day, when I was sollowing my sport with my falcon upon my sist, my heart was suddenly pierced with the sight of an object, which made an impression so tender, and so lively, as never could be essaced from thence, nor ever will. I was passing near one of the suburbs of Crema, when I saw at the door of a garden a sace the most amiable, that perhaps ever struck the eyes of man. In my first transport I made directly up to this beautiful person, but she immediately went into the garden, and shut the door after her. Inchanted as I was with this adorable beauty, I was in a state

of the utmost impatience, till I had informed myself of her condition, her character, her temper, and in short, whatever regarded her person, and her circumstances. Upon the strictest enquiry I was able to make, I found that this young woman was unmarried, that she was descended from people of low birth, that she was of an excellent disposition, her reputation unspotted, and, in the esteem of every body, blessed with an understanding superior to her station, and with a discretion beyond what is usually met with in her sex. It is not easy to say, what a variety of sensations arose in my breast, when I discovered that all who knew her, considered her as a kind of miracle, in beauty and in prudence.

But notwithstanding all that I was told on this last point, I flattered myself that follicitations and prefents might prevail, without facrificing my freedom. I employed for that purpose some women not unskilled in these arts, they went thither in a coach, under a pretence of being defirous to walk in the garden, but all their fubtleties fignified nothing. Her circumspection was fo great, that they plainly confessed, there were no hopes of fuccess. Upon this, I determined to go in person, and that she might not be alarmed with the presence of a man, I engaged the same persons to carry me in a semale dress, and being then but young, and looking younger than I was, this difguife fet very well upon me, fo that I passed through the adventure without affording the least grounds for suspicion.

This attempt, however, proved fatal only to myself, and totally compleated her conquest. She received me, not only as well, but even better than those whom I accompanied, compli-

mented

ned

m-

on,

en-

ing

ded

ex-

nd,

ın-

ha

in

ety

0-

as

his

nd

ny

ne

i-

e-

b-

on

re

r.

ot

1-

le

g

e

.

n

d

this

mented me on the openness of my countenance, and on the eafiness of my behaviour, but withal, expressed so much modesty in her own, that I totally loft the power of pursuing my first defign; returning from this interview, fo thoroughly convinced of her good fense, and so fensibly touched with finding fentiments fo elevated, in one of fo mean condition, that I hated myself for my former intentions, detelted the measures I had hitherto employed, and determined to make her my wife, notwithstanding the exterior disparity of our ranks. For if virtue be, as certainly it is, the fource of true nobility, what difference was there between us? or why should I prefer the advantages derived to me from birth, to those bestowed on her by the great author of nature? thus far I reasoned right.

A lover's resolution is quickly executed. The marriage treaty was of no long duration, I efpoused and conducted her hither, where we lived in the utmost felicity. Our union was perfect, our tenderness reciprocal. When I returned, on those days which I dedicated to hunting, she met me with transports of joy, and yet with eyes bathed in tears, left any accident should have befallen me. So that repeated marks of the fincerest fondness, mingled with the most perfect respect, sustained the first impressions in their full force, and would have taught me, to. love her more and more, had there ever been any measure in my affection. In a word, we passed fix whole years in a state that any couple upon earth might envy. But at length, heaven permitted, by a stroke of ingratitude, which could proceed only from a low and base born soul, that

this happiness should be overthrown, and over-

thrown for ever.

In this part of the country there lived a man of no wonderful genius, but who had some degree of wit, and certain talents, which ferved to difguise abundance of bad qualities. He practised a little mufick, and had a turn to poetry, which in the place where he lived made him more esteemed than he deserved. I took him into my house, as a kind of companion, to banish that folitude, in which I lived before my marriage, put him into the dress of a gentleman, set him at my table, and shewed him in every respect so much kindness and consideration, that he was in a manner as much mafter as myfelf. Before and after my marriage; he rode a hunting with me upon one of my horses, and as I was always a keen sportsman, he was sometimes tired, and rode home before me. This however was a thing he never did, till I was married, and then, because it afforded him a free opportunity of converfing, till my return, with my wife.

It was impossible that a thing of this nature should escape my notice or my observance, but the sellow had so very little merit, that it did not give me any great alarm, he was a little ill made creature with filthy teeth, large coarse hands, ill bred, of bad morals, and not much given to speak the truth. Tho' I was far enough from being jealous of such an animal, yet for the sake of decency, and to prevent my servants from entertaining salse notions, I thought proper to give him a hint, not to leave me in that manner, but to continue on horseback till the chace was over, and to return with me as he had for-

merly

merly done. From this time, on the night following the day, after that on which I had been hunting, there was a phantom feen about my house, which threw all my servants into the utmost terror and fright. I rose, whenever this outcry was made, went into my garden in search of this sprite, from whence I never returned, 'till I had examined every walk, alley, and corner. When I came back to my chamber, I observed that my wise had constantly locked herself in, and would never open the door, 'till by my voice she knew that it was I, who knocked, and this she pretended was thro'

extreme fear of the ghost.

C

e

h

d

a

1,

•

e

t

d

11

e

h

h

r

ts

er

1-

e

.

ly

In this uncouth fituation, things continued for fome time, which gave me an opportunity of making various observations, most of which contributed rather to the increase, than to the diminution of my concern and uneafiness. What perplexed me more than all the rest was, that with all the diligence I could possibly use, I could never discover what became of this phantom, or how, or where it disappeared. At length, one evening when I came home from hunting, I ordered a fervant to post himself the next night at the garden gate, with instructions to look closely after this apparition, and to give me an exact account of its route. After taking this precaution, I shut myself about the same hour of the next day into my bed chamber with my wife, not a little curious, to fee whether the ghost would make its appearance, as usual, or not. While my thoughts were thus occupied, the dogs began to bark, and to make a greater noise than ever, the phantom having put on that night such a gigantick form, that its head reached VOL. I. above

The marvellous Discovery; or, above the windows, and almost to the roof of

the house. I roldw no

I made all the hafte that it was possible to get on my cloaths, and instead of visiting the walks and allies as usual, went directly to the garden gate, where my man had taken post. As soon as I drew near him, he faid in a low voice, foftly, Sir, foftly, this fame ghost is no other than your great favourite, Cornelio, who has had recourse to this admirable invention, that while you are running about your garden, he may visit your lady at his leifure, and dishonour your bed. To tell you how he gets in or gets out furpasses my power, unless he has the affistance of the devil. All I know is, that what I tell you is the truth, and that it is some time fince I perceived what was the ground of all this disturbance. I was fo exasperated at what I heard, and transported with fury to fuch a degree, that feizing him by the collar, I instantly sheathed my dagger in his breaft. This, faid I, is to prevent your telling this tale to others, and to reward you, for not telling me fooner. The fellow dropping dead at my feet, I dragged him into a little cellar, that is just by the gate, and there I left him.

After locking the garden door, I walked flowly back to the house, that I might have time to recover myself a little, and to compose my mind after what I had heard, and what I had done, that if practicable the marks of resentment and despair, which agitated my soul, might not appear in my face. When I came to my chainber door, I called out, my wife, who was behind it, and extremely frighted, asked if the phantom was not there, and would not open it, till she was fore there was no body but myself. It was impossible,

impossible, after what had happened, that my countenance should not betray somewhat of the consusion that reigned in my bosom. My wise immediately perceived it. Oh heavens, cry'd she, what is it that you have done! your aspect is no more the same. Ten thousand curses light on this phantom, or on whoever has invented this villainous contrivance, to disturb your quiet and mine. She pronounced this with such an air of sincerity, and with so violent an emotion, that I knew not what to think.

I diffembled the best I could, desired her to lay aside her sears, and to let us go to bed. She took all imaginable pains to quiet and to pacify me, and this with such affection and tenderness,

that I was still more and more embarrassed, nay, quite at a lofs what judgment to form, of what I had heard and what I faw. You may believe, I did not fleep much that night, nor need I dwell on that successive revolution of disagreeable ideas that kept me waking. As foon however as day broke, I rose, put on my hunting apparel, and with a chearful voice, and with as much ferenity as it was in my power to fhew, called for Cornelio and my fervants with the dogs, horfes, and hawks. I fpent the whole day in the fields, in beating about to no purpose, my dogs starting no game, and my hawks making not fo much as a fingle flight. When it drew towards evening, Cornelio pretended to be taken very ill, that he might have a pretence for going home.

I fent him back accordingly, and charged him to tell my wife, that she should not expect me that night, as I had lost a favourite hawk at ten

miles distance, and could have no hopes of finding her again till morning. My spark departed, D 2 seemingly feemingly well pleased with his commission, and left me in a state of disquietude, much easier to be conceived than expressed; for I was yet in some incertainty, and my thoughts busy in finding out

some effectual way to come at truth.

When it grew dark I fent away my fervants to different villages to look for my hawk. By this time the night was advanced, and I returned home with as much expedition as my horse could make. I entered by a back door through the garden, of which I had the key, and went directly to Cornelio's apartment, but found no body there. He had left a wax candle burning on the table, I took it, and went into a large hall that joined to his room, which I examined closely, to see if he was there. But seeing nothing of him, I went down into the lower hall, on one fide of which my bed chamber is fituated. I was scarce within the door, before what I looked for struck my view. A ladder reared against the wall, wherein there was a hole made big enough for a man to creep through, from before which had been taken down a capital picture of Titian's, representing the adultery of Mars and Venus. There needed no more. I was now certain of my dishonour, and my foul was from that moment entirely occupied with the defire of revenge.

The first thing I did, was to set the ladder aside, that my man might not be able to make his escape. I then went up stairs, with as much noise as I was able to make, crying as I approached the door with a loud voice, open I charge you, epen it this moment. My wife did not trespass at all upon my patience, but unlocked it as I bid her in an instant. At that moment, Corne-

the

lio endeavouring to fave himfelf, crept through the hole, and thinking to have fet his feet upon the ladder, dropped from top to bottom, by which he broke both his legs at the knees. I also went out locking the door behind me, in order to receive him, for I heard him tumble; and making as much hafte as I could down stairs, I found him upon entering the hall, crawling along like a bull that had been hamstring'd. Traytor! faid I, unmindful of all the benefits that I have conferred upon thee, receive the just reward of thy infamous ingratitude. While I was speaking, I stabbed him to the heart, and not contented with that, I hanged him also upon the ladder which he had been using. From thence, in the full transport of my rage I went up stairs, with a determined resolution to dispatch my wife; but the moment I cast my eyes upon her, the dagger dropped out of my hand. I stooped, took it up, grasped it firmly, and advanced the fecond time, and a third, but to no purpose. I dropt it as before, and found it impossible to injure that beautiful body, which had been fo long the object of my tenderness and affection.

At length it came into my head, to shut her up in a vault with the dead body of her lover, which I had convey'd thither, finding it absolutely out of my power to carry my resentment farther. I bound her hands and feet to a post, and having taken out his heart in her presence, I lest it there upon a bench, that she might always have before her eyes, an object which had been so dear to her. I dragged thither likewise the body of the servant that I had killed, saying, as I threw it on the other side of her, there lies

D 2

As foon as he had said this he lighted a slambeaux, and again befought me to follow him. After crossing a little garden, he opened the door of that dismal place, which he had made the sad depository of all his evils. On one side lay a carcass stretched on the ground, covered with wounds; on the other, lay the remains of a body torn to pieces, the fide quite laid open, and the heart lying upon a bench before the eyes of the most finished beauty, that perhaps nature ever formed. As if this fight had not been moving enough in itself, a new circumstance intervened which heightened the furprize. The dogs that followed us from the house, ran hastily to their mistress, rolled themselves at her feet, and then with much gentleness rearing themselves against the wall, licked her hands and her face, with fuch visible signs of pity as are not to be expressed. Unable to contain myself, I burst into fighs and tears, and her husband too changing his countenance, fell into an agony of forrow

not to be described.

I seized that favourable moment, when I plainly perceived, that in spite of all his fierceness his heart began to relent. Hitherto, Sir, faid I, my attention has been fo great as not to interrupt you, in any thing that you have done me the honour to confide to me, partly, because I thought you not in a condition to liften to any advice, and partly, because I conceived it my duty, to wait till you gave me permission to speak. Very well, Sir, faid he, with a quick voice, let me hear what it is you have to fay, and be affured, that whatever advice you give me, it is not either in my will, or in my power to refuse my affent. Encouraged by these words, and still more by the manner in which they were spoken, and by which I plainly faw, that pity began to gain the ascendant over his resentment, I threw off all restraint, and addressed myself to him in the following terms.

I have learn'd, Sir, from your own mouth, that

that the commencement of your passion at the first fight of your lady, made so deep an impresfion on your mind, as nothing ever could efface, or ever will. I shall not attempt to fearch the bottom of this deplorable adventure, but whether your suspicions be well or ill grounded, you have yourfelf affured me, that, except those wretches that lie there extended before us, and whose mouths are now effectually stopped, nobody in the world has the least knowledge of it. You must be likewise sensible, that honour or dishonour does not in the least depend upon us, and what we know of ourselves, but what is known of us by others; if this was not the case. one half of the world would fly from the other, and all fociety become impracticable. The death therefore of these two miserable men, gives you the strongest security, that this melancholy affair will remain eternally a fecret. Behold, Sir, your spouse yet living, and it may be innocent; methinks, your repeated resolutions to destroy her, and repeated disappointments, speak strongly in her favour, and amount to a presumption she did not deferve that death, which you wanted power to inflict. I beseech you also to observe, the amazing tenderness of those poor creatures, and how strangely they demonstrate their sympathetic affliction by actions as expressive as speech.

Before the husband was able to answer a word, the lady replied with a faint and hollow voice. No, Sir, your intercessions are vain, I desire to live no longer. The possession of all that the sun shines on, could never tempt me to wish to see his light; but as so strange an event, as this, will never probably escape your memory, and as

it is possible you may speak of it to others, I would willingly have you instructed in the truth; that on the one hand you may not blaft my hufband, with the imputation of causeless cruelty, or load my memory with infamy, that I have never deserved. Hear then, Sir, hear the truth, which in circumstances like these, you cannot furely apprehend, I would either diffemble or

disguise.

These two men, whom you see lying on the ground, both merited the death with which they have been punished. One, for having falfely affirmed things which he neither did, nor could possibly know. The other, not for any ill that he had done, but for the ill he intended, and the villainous return he made to a generous benefactor, who was never weary of heaping on him obligations. I do not pretend to fay, that this miferable wretch never fpoke to me in the absence of my husband, for the contrary is true; and on the other hand I must own, that as he never faid any thing which could have offended a woman of the severest virtue, so the slightest fuspicion never entered my head, of his having any finister intentions.

It is true, that on the night when our common disafter happened, I saw him for the first time with the utmost astonishment, come from behind a picture into my chamber. I had only time to ask him, what it was brought him thither, and was going to the door to call for help, when I heard my husband's voice, who commanded me to open it. As he brought you hither himfelf, no doubt he has told you all the rest. I leave him to judge, whether the conduct I have

purfued

purfued, for more than fix years that I have had the honour to be his wife, ever afforded him the least ground for fuspicion? fupposing me guilty, I appeal also to himself, whether he conceives me to be fo void of common fense, as to have recourse to such absurd and foolish methods of covering my dishonesty? No, Sir, all the crowns upon earth could not tempt me to a breach of fidelity, to one who was the kindest, and the most faithful of husbands. It is not in my power to fay more to difabuse him, or to undeceive you. Employ then, Sir, that pity which you have shewn me, in imploring him not to spare, but to finish my life, let me die at once, and offer myfelf a martyr, not to expiate my crimes,

but to put an end to his fuspicions.

When the had done fpeaking, I turned myfelf to the husband, whose cheeks were wet with tears, which flowed faster and faster all the time of her relation. What think you, Sir, faid I of all this? to which with a voice mingled with fighs, he replied. The fame liberty that I gave you to fay what you pleafed, I now leave you to do what you shall think fit. Upon that I drew my ponyard from my fide and cut the cords, by which this poor Andromeda was tied to the posts, supporting the vault, and which stood before the bench upon which fhe was feated; and the moment I had done this, fhe fell into my arms, being fo extremely weak, as not to be able to fustain herself, and I retiring a little, fuffered her to fink gently upon the ground. The hufband penetrated with grief, to fee her in fo fad a condition, and being by this time as fully perfuaded of her innocence, as he had ever been of ב לינותו ביותו ביות

her guilt, threw himfelf on his knees to implore her pardon. But she was fallen into a swoon, and her limbs were so cold and stiff, that for

some time I really thought her dead.

The husband pressed his lips to hers, and bathed her face with his tears, then fuddenly flarting up, he ran to the house, and returned instantly with a bottle of some kind of liquid, of which with my affiftance he forced her to take a few drops, which brought her to herfelf, and for a minute or two forced a colour into her cheeks. Alas ! Sir, faid she, opening the finest eyes I had ever beheld, why will you detain me from that death which I feek? It is, faid he fighing, to preferve my life. Without faying a word more, he made a fign to me to affift him, and we carried her from that difmal place into his own apartment, where by the help of proper medicines, rich cordials, and comfortable draughts, we brought her in some measure to herself, and into a fair way of recovering her strength, and all this without any of his domesticks being apprized of what had happened.

I would have taken my leave the next day, in order to have profecuted my journey, but they both pressed me so earnestly to remain with them a little while, that I could not avoid yielding to their importunities. In short, I stayed about three weeks, during which space the lady recovered her beauty, her husband his tranquillity, the servants the use of their tongues, and the gardens their former lustre; and thus leaving all things in a far better state than I found them, I continued my route to Venice, without meeting with any remarkable accident, either good or

bad, during the rest of my journey.

Thus

different motives it very frequently falls out.

There is too much reason to believe, that the fame passions would every where be attended with the same effects, if law, custom, and education did not hinder; and this is so much the more probable, in as much that we see, that the French and even the English, after residing some years in Spain or in Italy, acquire from habit a disposition like to those with whom they converse. So mutable a thing is human nature, and so easily wrought upon by example, either good or bad. So little force too have even the princi-

treated as criminals upon every suspicion, and where husbands dare not use them as slaves on any pretence, as in other countries, and from

ples of religion, in those who are very fincere in their professions, in comparison with the turn of humour that prevails, and the tide of common opinion, which however abfurd or ill founded. bears down all before it; and infenfibly conffrains people to a compliance, with notions that their own good fenfe, if they had the power of reflection, would readily teach them are equally

foolish and unjust.

I doubt, my friends, I have detained you too long, with a recital of things ftrange to English ears, and which perhaps appear entertaining to me, from a circumstance which I have just condemned, that of catching a foreign habit, from having refided long in a foreign country. I haften therefore to relieve your attention, by giving you a few verses written in the same spirit, with that of my tale, and I heartily wish that the amusement of to morrow may make you some amends, for that complaifance which you have shewn to night, and which, tho' it might have been eafily better placed, could not have been more gratefully accepted.

Some hold, but fure it is an herefy, That circumstances pass all evidence; As if they thought that all reality, Must dance attendance upon each semblance; Yet little must they care for certainty, Who place its proof upon the word of chance. The strumpet shew'd the coat to prove th' offence, Of JOSEPH Stripp'd, but not of innocence. seasond with the only sees

cres on die ordere U.

In mifty weather, who depends on fight, Can hardly fail of losing oft his way: The dreams that scare the soul thro'out the night, Are scarce remembred at the break of day. Thus passion dims or souts out reason's light, Sad source of tragic scenes, and fearful fray. A woman's prudence once, bow blest therein! From death preferv'd ber Lord, ber King from fin.

O think if e're suspicions fill thy breast, That accidents defy the greatest care; Beware that passion of thy soul possest, Produce for witnesses no phantoms there; And own this maxim ever as the best, Tho' truth's the beauty, falshood may seem fair. Decide discreetly in a weighty cause, An hasty judgment, long repentance draws.

Sir Lawrence was the first to compliment the lady on her flory, which he declared pleafed him extremely, and particularly remarked how readily the husband imputed the supposed guilt of his wife, to the meanness of her birth; when if his supposition had been true, it might with much greater justice been ascribed to his own indiscretion, in making a favourite of fuch a fellow as Cornelio. But, added he, this is the way of young men, they bring mischief upon mischief on themselves, and yet they are ever in the right. Captain Courtly next expressed his satisfaction, yet with this remark, that it was difficult

cult to find evidence against beauty, and that he forefaw the conclusion of the piece, when the husband declared, his passion never was nor ever could be effaced. Mr. Pensive thought this was refining too far, and was perfectly clear, that from the circumstances of the relation the lady must be innocent. Miss Charlotte and Califta would have spoke their praises of the tale, if they had been able, however their tears spoke for them. Beaumont closed the conversation, by faying that the guilty were punished, and that nothing could be better contrived to shew, unequal marriages are feldom happy throughout. Mr. Penfive, faid he, will divert us to morrow night, and I hope his flory will not be also in the fanguinary strain, for the fake of these poor young ladies.

mode a contract observed and offer a four raufe or concord. What I have concord that be for this applicance of this not coable audience is

and the first tensor are the first of the first and the property of the hard parameters and the circum fauncia and as as any armed mession tion, if and exempron your evolute, at anno i rested ob theory I had their mond use its now I conduct the mone of my performance not che sellieft effected auto la surpole, theil be alt.

Charge Countries of American Street

kingdom of Penneyd, there alwellered as endont

account to the best total in

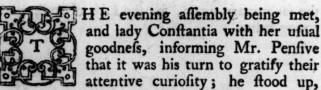
64 Fortitude surpasses Fortune; or,

FORTITUDE surpasses FORTUNE;

OR,

The Triumph of Constancy.

A PORTUGUESE HISTORY.



made a profound obeifance, and after a short pause proceeded. What I have collected, said he, for the amusement of this agreeable audience, is the substance of what I once heard with pleasure, and tho it was some years ago, yet I flatter my-felf that my memory will not betray me in the circumstances, and as to the manner of the relation, I must depend upon your candour, assuring you at the same time that I would do better if I could. The motto of my performance not altogether estranged from its purpose, shall be this.

All omens, good, to virtuous minds prefage.

In the Province of Tra-los-Montes, in the kingdom of Portugal, there dwelt in an ancient castle

eaftle on the banks of the river Douro, a gentleman descended from ancestors, who had distinguished themselves as well in the Indies as in Europe, whose name was Don Antonio de Menezes. His estate was small, and his wife, who was also of a noble family, dying when young, left him an only fon named after his mother's brother Alphonso, the care of whose education, joined to that of his little patrimony, were the chief occupations of the good old man. He had passed the first part of his youth in the Spanish fervice in the Low Countries, and in the prime of his life had rifen with great reputation to the post of a colonel of foot, in the war which Portugal maintained, to support the title of the house of Bragança, and her own independency. He was learned and a great lover of books, had freer notions than are common with his countrymen, and with respect to his manners was extremely polite. From the time he became a widower, he had lived with fuch frugality, that when his fon had attained the age of fixteen, and was removed to the university of Coimbra, he was able to maintain him there in a manner fuitable to his birth, out of the fund which he had been studious to raise for that purpose; and when he had fpent three years there, fent him to make the tour of France with a recommendation to a person of high quality, to whom Don Antonio had been formerly useful, and who received and entertained Alphonso with all the generofity that honour and gratitude could inspire.

But while the young Alphonso was improving the gifts of nature, and the advantages derived from education, an unexpected accident befell Don Antonio; who going to Lisbon upon some

important

important affairs, fell desperately in love at the age of fifty five, with a young lady of nineteen; whose name was Donna Elvira del Ebora. Her father was just dead, in circumstances none of the best, and having left a widow with several children, this young lady was content, to prefer the bed of an old cavalier to the aufterities of a convent, which she must have otherwise born as well as the could, how repugnant foever to her inclination. He carried her home, and before he had well made those alterations in his family, which became requisite from such a change in his circumstances, he was surprized by death, yet not so suddenly, but that he had provided for his wife, by fettling upon her fo far as he could the best part of his estate, under colour that having discharged former incumbrances with which it descended to him, he had acquired a power of doing what he did, which however was a thing doubtful. tionally address Front the Clament

Don Alphonfo was but half recovered from the furprize into which he fell on the news of his father's marriage, when he received the tidings of his death. As this event rendered his presence absolutely necessary in Portugal, he returned this ther through Spain, and went to the house of an uncle of his by the mother's fide, where he was extremely well received, and an offer made him of all the support that was necessary to profecute his rights, to the estate of his family in a court of justice. Don Alphonso hesitated at this for two reasons, in the first place he thought that it was injuring his father's memory, and next, that it was indecent to have recourse to fuch a method, till he had paid his duty to his mother in law, and had tried how far things might be amicably instrum.

amicably adjusted. These objections were but coldly entertained by his uncle, and a moorish slave of his father's named Hamet, who came thither to meet him, assured him that Elvira's spirit would not suffer her to listen to any terms of accommodation.

1

f

n

0

وا

ď

d

g

n

38

e

÷

n

15

n

e

rt

r

t,

er

y

Don Alphonfo eafily faw that he exposed himfelf to the risk of being thought both rash and obstinate, but nevertheless he adhered to his own opinion, and after having thanked his uncle with equal respect and gratitude for his good advice, and kind offers, he took his leave, sensible enough that he had nothing farther to expect from that quarter. When he came home it was with fome difficulty that he obtained an apartment, tho' he had an indubitable title to the house even by his father's fettlement, and it was a day or two before he could procure an audience of his mother in law, whose grief was so great that the had hitherto feen nobody, except her women and her confessor. When he was admitted to her presence he saw a disconsolate beauty, whose youth rendered her unable to diffemble that his arrival added to her affliction. He faid all that was in his power to confole her, and shewed so much deference in his behaviour, as well as fo much fincerity in his expressions of esteem and duty, that Elvira could not help altering her conduct; and tho' she defired he would abstain from vifiting her till her mind was more compoled, yet the affured him, that as foon as it was in her power to resume in some measure her tranquillity. he would not fail of giving him an opportunity to discourse of their affairs.

It was almost three weeks before he heard any thing farther from the lady, except the compli-

ment of fending once a day to know how he did. At length she appointed an hour for his reception, and when he came he found her perfeetly calm, tho' her afpect was still as melancholy as before. She told him she was unwilling to trespass longer upon his patience, and therefore defired that he would tell her freely what his fentiments were of the disposition his father had made. In answer to this, Don Alphonso faid that he was extremely forry, the circumstances of his family had not put it in his father's power to do more for her than he had done, that the kindness which his father had shewn him, and the pains he had taken in his education would render it ingrateful as well as undutiful in him, to raise any objections to what he had testified to be his pleasure; that as he had never disputed it while he was fo happy as to have a parent, he would shew the same respect to his memory; and that belides, the might rely upon his duty, fubmission, and assistance in every thing. Elvira thanked him, and faid that fhe was forry to be obliged to put those professions immediately to the test, by defiring him to quit the castle as foon as conveniently he could, and to retire to a house by the wood fide, which belonged also to the estate, and that he would likewise excuse her from his visits, adding, with a flood of tears, that his person had so strong a resemblance of his father, that it was impossible for her to recover her health, if he did not confent to what the defired. Don Alphonfo made her no other reply than that she should be obeyed, and making a profound bow immediately withdrew.

He went the next day to the house by the wood, which tho' small was convenient enough

C

1-

-

at

er 6

1-3

at ıd

ld

n,

ed

ed ne

1 y,

ra be

to on

a to

le

5,

of

e.

at er

he

zh

10

for him who had no other domestics, than an old woman that had been his nurse and his moor. He passed the summer in a state of perfect retirement, meditating on his condition and on the course of life that he was to pursue, his revenue being very small, and his mother's relations entirely disobliged. One evening riding out to take the air, his horse started and threw him; but as he was nimble and adroit in his exercises he soon recovered his feet, and was remounted before Hamet reached him. The moor was exceedingly alarmed, and earnestly perfuaded him to return home, because he looked upon this accident as the fign of fome impending miffortune. Don Alphonfo, who knew the man wanted not courage, bid him lay afide his fears, and promifed that he would not go fo far as he intended. They had fcarce rode a hundred yards before they heard a voice calling for help at some distance in the wood, upon which Don Alphonso made all the haste thither that he could, and quickly faw an old gentleman with his back against a tree, defending himself against three ruffians, his fervant lying at his feet weltring in Don Alphonso slew to his assistance, and was bravely seconded by Hamet; after an obstinate dispute they at length remained victors, the affailants retiring to their horses held by one of their companions, which when they had once mounted they were foon out of reach, Don Alphonfo being dangerously wounded in the breast and in the thigh.

The gentleman he had rescued was near seventy, of a venerable appearance, and who testified the utmost concern at seeing his deliverer in so fad a condition. He told him his house was near, and that the only expedient, of which he could think, was to take one of the horses and to ride thither himself, in order to send some of his people to take care of him. Don Alphonso acquiesced, and in as short a space as could be expected, five servants came with two litters and removed him, and the man that was wounded to their master's house, to which Hamet followed on horseback.

The person whom Don Alphonso had faved from death, was Don Philip Mascarenhas a nobleman of great quality and immenfely rich. He caused all imaginable care to be taken of his gueft, who in the space of fix weeks was perfeetly out of danger, tho' extremely weak by the loss of blood, during the time he had remained in the wood. He then fignified his defire to return home, but Don Philip would by no means confent. He vifited him conffantly twice a day, told him his father was his intimate friend, and that he would not hear of his departure till he was absolutely recovered; adding, that his house and servants were at his command, and that as foon as he was able to take the air, he would accompany him in his coach, and introduce him to the gentlemen in the neighbourhood. Don Alphonso desired to be excused from paying vifits or going much abroad, but contented himself, when he was able to walk, with amusing himself in the gardens which were very fine and silv al behavew

One morning Don Philip came earlier than usual to his apartment, and after many apologies told him he was obliged to go to Lisbon for a sew days, but that his chaplain, who was a man of letters, and had spent a part of his life in

d

of

O

e

rś

d

d

đ

is

y ----y

e

e

him)

Italy, should keep him company till his return. Don Alphonfo earnestly pressed that he would allow him to go home, to which the old gentleman replied, that he would rather put off his journey, upon which he fubmitted. The chaplain, to whose care he was committed, was a very worthy, as well as a very pious man, and who from the first time he saw him conceived a great kindness for Don Alphonso. He spent the best part of the day with him, and in the course of his converfation acquainted him that Don Philip had an only daughter, whose name was Donna Therefa about feventeen, beautiful, and one of the most accomplished ladies in Portugal, that her mother died in childbed, that Don Philip was excessively fond of her, and that he intended to marry her to his nephew, and that his bufinefs at Lifbon was to take proper measures for procuring a dispensation. They talked afterwards of indifferent things, till Don Alphonso thought it time to go to bed.

As foon as he came to his apartment, and the fervants of the family were retired, Hamet came to him with much joy, and told him, that his mother in law, who had fent constantly to enquire of his welfare, had that morning, by her fleward, remitted him four hundred crufadoes, which had been recovered of his father's arrears with a compliment, the best part of which Hamet had forgot. His mafter chid him a little for his negligence; Hamet defired he would excuse him, for an affair of another nature had put it out of his head. Don Alphonso with some furprize asked him, what that affair was? he told him, that about two hours before, an old woman had put a key into his hands (which he delivered him) and defired him to tell his master that it would open the door on the left hand of the outer room belonging to his apartment, and that he would there find a person who had somewhat to say to him. Don Alphonso took a candle, and with a curiosity natural to a young man, went immediately to make use of his key. He found in the room into which that door opened, the same old woman who had spoke to Hamet, and who without saying any thing, conducted him through a gallery into a large drawing room

where he found Donna Therefa.

He paid his respects to her with all imaginable deference, and she told him in return that having faved her father's life, she found it impossible to refift the defire she had to fee him, and to testify her acknowledgments for fo acceptable a fervice, that she knew however this might not be pleasing to her father, which was the reason of her employing the method she had put in practice, which the hoped therefore he would excuse, and not have the worse opinion of her discretion, since he was the first man she had ever seen alone, except Don Philip. The interview was short, but it ended as might well be expected; Don Alphonfo returned to his apartment, as much in love as a man could possibly be; and Hamet found him fo much altered, that he asked him over and over if he was not fick, and if he should not call up the furgeon who was still in the house. His mafter affured him that he was very well, and with some difficulty prevailed upon him to go to bed. As for Don Alphonso he slept not a wink, for some time his thoughts were wholly employed upon the lady's beauty, wit, and admirable modesty; afterwards he reflected on himfelf

felf, for having taken this liberty in Don Philip's house, and in his absence; his thoughts ran next on his melancholy situation, from the approaching marriage of the young lady, and all together had such an effect on his spirits, that in the morn-

ing he was in a high fever.

it

it

t

1,

,

d

n

,

e

,

,

n

h

,

•

The chaplain being informed of Don Alphonfo's indisposition, went immediately to see him, carried with him the furgeon, and fent for a physician. The patient was far from being fo tractable as before, defired to be left alone, infifted that he would take no physic, and that he wanted nothing but repose. The surgeon was of opinion, that he went abroad too foon; but when the doctor came, and had very exactly enquired into every thing, as well as examined the fick man's pulse and eyes, he said to the chaplain; "Father, I will spare no pains to " ferve Don Alphonfo, but I am perfuaded that " you can do him more good than I. His body " is indeed out of order, but it is in confe-" quence of fome extraordinary emotion of the " mind; fo that to free him from this diforder, " his spirits must be first composed; which " when your advice shall have performed, my " task will not be difficult." Our ecclesiastic made no reply, but having recommended it to Don Alphonfo to dispose himself if possible to rest, he left Hamet alone with his master, and promifed to return in a convenient space.

As foon as he quitted the apartment of Don Alphonso, he went to that of Donna Theresa, where he found her very melancholy and uneasy: he told her plainly, that he was at no loss to guess either the cause of her concern, or of Don Alphonso's illness; he chid her severely for see-

Vol. I. E ing

The third day after his coming home, he fent his daughter to the house of a lady at no great diffance; and when Don Alphonso had recovered his strength, he prevailed upon him to accompany him to Lisbon, by telling him, that he had an affair of importance depending there, in which he had some interest. The ambiguity of this expression had a strange effect on our young cavalier; he flattered himself, that some extraordinary turn had happened in the old gentleman's disposition, or that the councils of his friend the priest had operated on his behalf, which gave him new life and vigour, fo that he fet out for Lifbon, with an air of fatisfaction and gaiety, he had never shewn before, at least fince his father's death.

TITLE

ut

ry

e-

nis d,

in e,

n-

in fy

10

as

e,

f-

ft

is

nt

at

)-

c-

ne

n

of

g

1-

-

is

f,

e

n

ft

e

He was confirmed in this pleasing expectation, by the care that Don Philip took to introduce him to his friends and relations, as well as to persons of the first distinction; and with the warmth the old gentleman shewed, in repeating to every body the adventure of the wood. What was a little fingular, he foon contracted not only an acquaintance, but a strict friendship with his rival Don Garcias de Mascarenhas, about three years older than himfelf, and one of the worthieft and best bred gentlemen in Portugal. It was not long however before he was awaked from all his dreams of future felicity, by Don Philip's acquainting him, that he had procured him a company in the garrison of Mosambique, and that the governor of this important fortress having only one year remaining of his term, he was not without hopes of obtaining for him the reversion of that government, where by following the examples of his predeceffors, he might in a fhort space of time acquire an ample fortune.

The thoughts of being banished to a distant fortress in Africa, and the leaving Donna Therefa for ever, made fuch an impression on his mind, that it was with the greatest difficulty he made a decent return to his protector, for fo great a mark of his friendship; for so he could not help apprehending it, notwithstanding it not only defeated, but destroyed all his hopes. He was quite at a loss how to behave upon an occafion, in which his paffion, his honour, and his interest were all at stake. He had no confident to whom he could unbosom his afflictions, and in this fituation he was in the utmost danger of forfeiting the character he had acquired for his dif-E 2

ing any resolution.

Don Garcias told him with a smile, that love had been already not a little fatal to his family. He defired him to reflect on what he owed to himself, and to that rising reputation, which he had acquired by the fervice he had rendered his uncle; that in the present state of things he ought to follow his duty, and to accept with gratitude a preferment, which tho' his father's fervices had merited, he could never attain; adding with an air of kindness and confidence, that how contrary foever this might at prefent feem to his inclinations, it might possibly prove the means of promoting them, and that he did not at all despair of seeing him again in a short time in Portugal, in circumstances worthy of his birth and virtues. Don Alphonso answered, that he discern'd little hopes of this; but that as he knew no better way of disposing of himself, he was determined to acquiesce, and to bear with fortitude, what it was impossible for him to avoid.

The money which his mother-in-law had fent him, would have fufficed for the necessary expences of his equipage, if it had not been amply provided by Don Philip, who with his nephew accompanied re-

as

he

ry,

the

red

ce,

hat

it,

m-

ve

ly.

to

he

his

ght

ea

nad

an

n-

in-

of

le-

or-

nd

lif-

no

er-

le,

ent

X-

oly

W

ed

accompanied him on board the ship that was destined to transport him, and the recruits intended for the garrifon to which he was going. After a splendid entertainment given to those illuffrious persons, they took their leave, but in affifting Don Philip to descend into his boat, Don Alphonso had the misfortune to fall into the water, yet was presently taken up without receiving any great hurt by the accident. however terrible disquiet to Hamet, who could not help muttering that this voyage would be of a piece with their former adventure, and that in his opinion there could not be a clearer proof, they were destined to go to the bottom; fo that he lost fight of the coast of Portugal with tears in his eyes, fully perfuaded in his mind, that he should never see them again.

The third day the weather was fo calm, that there was scarce a breath of wind stirring. A little past three in the afternoon a small gale sprung up, about the fame time two large veffels appeared in fight, and it was not long before they discovered plainly they were Algerine Cor-All the necessary dispositions were made for a vigorous defence, notwithstanding the great inequality. About five the action began, and tho' the Portuguese soldiers defended themselves with great refolution, yet in an hour's time the captain and forty men being killed, one of the feamen struck the colours, and the biggest of the two Corfairs immediately entered above one hundred men. Don Alphonfo was wounded but not dangerously, yet from the inhuman difpolition of those pirates he ran the hazard of being murdered, if it had not been for Hamet, who was known to the officer that came to take

E. 3

possession.

possession, tho' he had been a slave upwards of twenty years. At his request they were both carried on board the largest of the two ships, the commander of which was a near relation of Hamet's, and it was in his father's vessel that he was taken prisoner by the Portuguese. Upon his account Don Alphonso was treated with kindness and civility; but from thence also the Algerine captain conceiving that he must be a person of higher rank than he really was, determined to make the most of his capture, and to insist upon

a very high ranfom.

By that time they arrived at Algiers, Don Alphonfo was pretty well recovered of his wounds, and in the course of the voyage, Hamet paid him all the duty and observance that he could have done if he had been still his slave. When he was on shore he was used with respect and suffered to go where he pleased, because Hamet bound himself for his punctual observation of the terms upon which that liberty was granted. There was at that time a Spanish renegado at Algiers, whose name was Don Philip, immensely rich, and in great credit, tho' not altogether free from suspicion; notwithstanding that the fame fenfuality which had engaged him to renounce the christian religion, induced him to lead fuch a kind of life, as left no great room to doubt that he had entirely left those principles in which he was educated. But the compaffion that he retained for christian captives exposed him to the ill will of the Mahometans, of which, tho' he was well apprized, it was imposfible for him to change his nature, or to fet any bounds to that tenderness he had for the misfortunes of those whom he honestly considered as much better men than himself.

s of

oth

the

Ha-

he

his

nd-

ge-

fon

to

on

AI-

ds.

aid

uld

he

uf-

net

he

d.

at

ly

er

he

e-

to

m

1-

1-

-

of [-

S

As foon as he heard of Don Alphonfo's miffortune he was defirous of feeing him, but very prudently fent for Hamet, of whom there could be no jealoufy as he was still a zealous Mohammedan, and allied to some of the most confiderable families in Algiers. He gave him the best account he could of his master, and recommended him in the strongest terms as a person worthy of his kindness and protection: upon this Don Philip defired him to bring him to his house with the confent of the Corfair, and in a few days conceived fo great an esteem for him, that if Don Alphonso would have consented, he would have paid even the exorbitant price that his master demanded, which our Portuguese declined, from an apprehension, that this was by no means the proper method for obtaining his freedom. Don Philip eafily penetrated this notion, and declined faying any thing farther on that subject, but however affured him of his friendthip and affiftance to the utmost extent of his power.

The reason why Don Alphonso chose rather to remain in the hands of the surliest, than live with the best master in Algiers, was, because he knew that Don Philip durst not suffer any of his slaves to be ransomed, and that consequently nothing but the death of that gentleman could have set him free, supposing him ever so well inclined in that respect. He spent however the best part of his time, with the Corsair's permission, till advices could be received from his own country, at the house of Don Philip, where he entered into a strict friendship with Manuel de Figuera his

E 4

countryman,

countryman, who was grown old in flavery, because Don Philip could not part with him, or perhaps would not have done it if he could. This man managed all his concerns with equal diligence and dexterity, and it was entirely owing to his skill and care, that Don Philip's country house was the finest in the neighbourhood of Algiers. Manuel was at this time upwards of fixty, and his strength for which he was once famous began to fail him, whence he perfuaded himself that he had not long to live. He enquired of Don Alphonso concerning his own relations in Portugal, and as they were of the same province, he was able to inform him that they were all dead, except his youngest fister who was a nun, It was this man who supplied Don Alphonso with money, and who at feveral times gave him distant hints, that if his patron would fix his ransom, he might be able to do him service in case, as it often happened, his friends in Portugal should disappoint his expectations.

One day when he was at Don Philip's country house, and listening very attentively to the story of Manuel's misfortunes, Hamet surprized them by entering the grotto where they were with an air of transport. "Master, master Alphonso, "cried he, t'other day you were a captain and a great man, and Hamet was your slave. Then destiny gave a pull to your scale, and mine

"mounted up; Hamet became free, and entered into the possession of his brother's effects, and

" Don Alphonso took his place and became a flave. To day the scales are even. How so, dear Hamet, said Alphonso, you cannot be a

" flave again at Algiers. No, no, added he, but it comes to the same thing, you are no longer

countryman,

" a flave at Algiers, Don Garcias has paid your "ransom, and has besides fent you a letter of credit upon the French consul; you must there fore go back with me to the city, and tho' nothing can grieve me more than our separation, yet I would advise you to lose no time in returning home. Manuel congratulated him with great joy upon the good news, but at the same time whispered him, that for reasons of importance it was absolutely necessary he

" fhould fee him again."

al

f

Don Alphonfo and Hamet came together to Algiers, where they found every thing adjusted, and the French conful paid him two hundred fequins, telling him at the same time that there was a bark ready to fail, by which he might return without loss of time. Don Alphonso told Hamet that he must go back and take his leave of Manuel, and discharge the debt he owed him, which the other vehemently opposed. "Deftiny " has been very kind to you, mafter, faid he, " but she may play you some new trick, if you " despise her favours. I suppose you have no " doubt of my fidelity, and therefore leave it " to me to discharge this debt. You cannot " command the winds, and while you return to " Don Philip's the bark may fail." " True, re-" plied Don Alphonso, I cannot command the " winds, but I can command myfelf, I am " equally convinced of your friendship, and of " your good advice, neither am I without the " utmost impatience to be once again in Por-" tugal. But I have engaged my word to Ma-" nuel, and I would not break it if I was fure " of becoming a flave again and dying at Al-" giers. If you will go, faid Hamet, go this " moment

"moment and come back as foon as it is poffible, and in the mean time I will use my en-

"deavours to prevent your lofing this paffage."

Don Alphonfo thought this caution too reafonable to be neglected, and therefore made the utmost haste back to his friend, who, as soon as he faw him, conducted him to the fame grotto where they were wont to converse, and having embraced him tenderly with a flood of tears, he addressed him in these terms. " I am sensible, 66 my dear Alphonso, that this is the last time! fhall fee you, and that it will not be long be-" fore death will deliver me likewise from slawery. I would not have defired you to come " hither, purely to take your leave of a wretch " worn out with grief and care. Tell me, Alphonfo, for what fum of money had you credit upon the French conful? For any reasonable fum, replied he, and I have received two hundred fequins, which I have here, and at your fervice. I thank you, answered Ma-" nuel, and willingly accept your offer, that " fum will accomplish what I intended. But " mark me, Alphonso, when I first became a " flave it was at Tripoli, and there I was fo " cruelly treated by my mafter, that being no " longer able to bear his ill usage, I made my " escape and fled into the desert, where I had of no other sustenance than the beasts, and slept " in an old tomb at a small distance from Ben-" gazi, which is inhabited by the Arabs. This kind of life I led for feveral months, till want " of fubfiftence obliged me to remove, and I " took the road to Zala which is plentiful and " populous." 66 In Internoru *2

offi.

ge."

rea-

the

n as

otto

ving

, he

ble,

ne l

be-

fla-

ome

etch

Al-

cre-

on-

ved

and

Ia-

hat

But

2 8

fo

no

my

nad

pt

n-

his

nt

1

nd

In

went

" In that tomb I found a small treasure of " gold, and a little stone coffer, which I believe " contains a greater; as I had nothing else to " carry, you may believe that when I removed " I did not leave these behind. It was not long " after that I was taken and carried to Tunis, " where my lot would without question have " been fevere enough, if my present master "Don Philip, who was come thither to execute " a commission from the Dey of Algiers, had " not bought me upon my promife to live with " him during his life or my own. He permitted " me to go to the place of my retreat in the " mountains from whence I brought my little " treasure, and the stone coffer to Algiers. The " former I kept for my own use, the latter is " deposited with the fathers of the mission; and " upon producing this note they will deliver it " to you. Whatever it contains is yours, to " me in this place it can be of no use, the mo-" ney you have been so kind to give, and what " you have repaid me, will when added to my " little stock, answer the pious and charitable " intentions I have formed. Adieu! and when " you have taken some refreshment make all " the hafte you can to Algiers."

Don Alphonso after a short and slight meal parted from him with reluctance, and when he came to the house of Hamet shewed him the note. "Alas, master, said he, have you given "the old slave two hundred sequins for a stone cheft, come, your loss is not great, you shall not go with this tale to the consul. I will procure you a small supply, but there is no time to lose for the wind is fair, and the bark will certainly depart before sun set." They

E 6

84 Fortitude surpasses Forune; or,

went directly to the fathers of the mission, who upon feeing the note, and knowing Hamet's interest, delivered up the coffer, which was of a stone resembling flint, and tho' very neatly wrought had no visible aperture. They then went to take leave of the French conful, who fent his fecretary with some domesticks to see Don Alphonso safe on board, of whom when Hamet had with the greatest tenderness taken farewel, he retired to his cabin so weary with fatigue and want of rest, that they were quite clear of the coast of Barbary before he waked.

On the fifth day in the evening the veffel entered the river of Lisbon, and having put Don Alphonfo with what belonged to him on shore, continued her voyage to the port for which she was bound. The first thing he did next morning was to pay his devotions in the church nearest to the house of the merchant with whom he lodged, and in whose hands he had deposited that fmall fum, which he could call his own at the time of his departure, and of which he diffributed to the value of one hundred fequins in alms, after directing the like fum to be remitted for the use of Hamet. Upon enquiring after Don Philip Mascarenhas, he was informed that he was daily expected at Lisbon, and that part of his family was already come; he repaired to his house upon this news, and to his great joy found his old friend the chaplain, who received him with open arms, and with a fmiling countenance. The first ceremonies being over, Don Alphonso with an air of concern defired that worthy man to acquaint him with what had passed in his abfence, expressing at the same time his surprize that Don Garcias, to whose generosity he owed his

Inow

ly

en

10

n

n

th

te

1-

n

e,

10

nft

at

ne ed

f-

30

ias

is

d

h

e.

n

)e

d

is

ss have

vants.

his freedom, should not at the same time vouch-

"That, answered the priest, proceeded also " from his generofity. At the time he remitted " two thousand crusadoes for your ransom, he " was informed that you were his rival, and " that from the mouth of Donna Therefa. It " is still however unknown to her father, who " had taken all the steps previous to the marri-" age, to which when he found his daughter " shewed a reluctance, he was so much offended " that he caused her first to be confined to her " apartment, and at length removed her out of " his house, with an intention, as he declared, " to make Don Garcias his heir, and to thut " her up in a convent, if within a certain space " fhe did not alter her mind. The place to " which she was fent was the house of that lady " to whom she retired after your illness. Thi-" ther Don Garcias went to visit her, having " generously declared, that he meant not either " to force her inclinations, or to take any ad-" vantage of her father's disposition." " Admi-" rable young man! cried Don Alphonso the tears flowing down his cheeks, " but for heavens " fake what has been the consequence of all " this?" " That, replied his friend, I shall " explain to you as far as lies in my power in a " few words, for Don Philip is expected every " moment, and it is requifite I should give you " all the information I can before he arrives, " and for this reason if you please we will retire " to my apartment, that in case he comes we " may not be immediately interrupted." As foon as they were feated, and the chaplain

had given the necessary instructions to the fer-

vants, he continued his discourse to Alphonso in the following terms. "In the vifits which Don "Garcias paid Donna Therefa at the house of her friend, he was fo much charmed with the 66 beauty of that lady, tho' fome years older " than your mistress, and a widow, and at the se fame time ftruck with fuch a fense of her of prudence, virtue, and magnanimity in circumftances none of the most affluent, that he could not defend himself from falling despest rately in love with her. His person and his " accomplishments, independent of his birth and " fortune, were fufficient to fecure him a good " reception from a mind not prepoffeffed by any other object. Besides, the lady was exceed-46 ingly well pleafed with that honour and dif-" interestedness, with which he had conducted " himself in an affair of so delicate a nature. and it is now about fix weeks that these hands of joined theirs, but it is an absolute secret, the residence of Donna Theresa at her house 66 giving fuch a colour to his affiduity, that the real cause is scarce suspected by any."

But has this lady no name," faid Don Alphonfo?" " Yes, Sir, replied the prieft, her name is Donna Elvira the widow of"-" My father" cried Don Alphonfo. " True,

faid the priest, and tho' younger than your-felf has been a mother to you. It was her or praises of you that raised that strong curiosity

in Donna Therefa. It has been owing to her 46 discretion, that Don Philip has been restrained

of fo long from proceeding to extremities, and as a still farther proof of her regard for your

interests, she refused to marry Don Garcias still he had released all claims, that he might Vanits

n

of

ne

er

ne

er

r-

he

e-

115

br

bc

ny

d-

if-

ed

e,

ds

he

fe

he

1-

er

e,

r-

er

ty

er

ed

br

ur

28

ht ve " have in her right upon your father's effate." Don Alphonso was about to express his just sense of the maternal tenderness of Donna Elvira, when a fervant came to let them know that Don Philip Mascarenhas was arrived, and that being informed, Don Alphonfo de Menezes was in the house, defired to see and to congratulate him on his return con and alled warming on home

The interview between these illustrious perfons was extremely tender. Don Philip embraced and wept over him, as if he had been his only child. " My fon, faid he, what I had con-" trived with fo much care for your advantage, " has turned to your undoing. I fent you to a " command and you became a flave. I proposed " to make your fortune, and instead of doing it " have made you a beggar. As foon as I knew " of your misfortune, I determined to redeem " you. Before I could express my sentiments, " my nephew Garcias declared the fame inten-"tion. Thus have I hitherto been frustrated " in repaying the great obligation I owe you. " It is however but just! you faved my life at the hazard, and almost at the expence of your "own. All I thought of doing for you was fo " poor, and fo much below your merit, that " heaven has taught me to fee how much I am " inferior to you in generofity. My affections to my family blinded me. An unforeseen " perversity of humours has removed that veil " from my eyes. We will hear the history of "your adventures, and I will then endeavour " to convince you, that Don Philip de Masca-" renhas is not ingrateful, but as far as he can, is inclined to repay your fervice, and to make you fome amends for your fufferings."

It was with some difficulty that Don Alphonso acquitted himfelf in a manner fuitable to fo extraordinary, and fo unexpected a declaration. He spoke however from the dictates of his heart. and with fuch marks of deference and affection. as gave the highest satisfaction to the old man In the evening he made a full relation of all that had happened to him while he remained in Barbary, and having fent for the little coffer, made an offer of it with the contents, whatever they might be, to Don Philip. " Alas, child, faid he, " if as Manuel supposed it contains a treasure, " what good can it do me who am fo much " perplexed with what I have already? and as s a curiofity, my tafte for fuch things is long " ago loft, tho' for many years antiquities made " the chief of my amusements." Upon inspecting it carefully, there appeared an Arabick inscription within a kind of oval knot of flourifhes at the bottom, which shewed that it belonged to the first caliph of Egypt, whose former capital was in that country where the tomb flood in which this coffer was found. The form of it was oblong, about a foot and a half one way, and not quite a foot the other, the upper part of it was arched, but upon the nicest examination, there was not the smallest crevice to be found. After a long confultation the prieft proposed that it should be put into, and kept in boiling water for fome time, in order to try whether that would not discover the means of opening without defacing it. This project had the defired effect, it loofened the upper part, which without much difficulty was taken off. There then appeared the remains of some kind of stuff which was entirely decayed and rotten, that had been

" the

been embroidered with jewels which were yet remaining: of these there were twenty feven diamonds, small, but of the finest water, the fame number of rubies, and of the fame magnitude, and four Egyptian emeralds of an extraordinary fize, and as perfect as could be wished. Don Philip and the priest were of opinion, that these had been the ornaments of the tiara or diadem worn by the caliph, and the emeralds alone were effeemed to be worth more than twenty thousand crusadoes. Don Philip, when he had examined them abfolutely, refused to accept any thing but the coffer, the cover of which being adjusted with a note of its contents put therein, was placed amongst the rest of that nobleman's collections.

When Don Alphonfo was retired to his apartment, Don Philip Mascarenhas sent for his chapa in to his bedfide. "You have heard, faid he, " father, what I have faid to Don Alphonso de " Menezes, and are I dare fay apprized of my " intention. I would have you return to my " house with my equipage, and according to the " instructions that I have given, you will find " my daughter likewise come home. I must " tell you that in the course of this transaction, " I have found in Don Garcias a generofity fui-" table to his birth, an affection becoming a " nephew, but none of that warmth which be-" fpoke him any more in love with my daughter " than she is with him. Tell her therefore my "final intentions. Her curiofity may have prompted her to fee Don Alphonfo from her " window in the gardens, she knows very well " that he is worthy of her, and that besides he " has faved my life. The house we are in, and

so Fortitude surpasses Fortune; or,

the two estates I have in the neighbourhood of this city descending to me from my ancestors, belong of right to Don Garcias. All I have beside shall be theirs. If she dislikes my

" fecond choice let her take her own. I will confent to her becoming a nun, and make

"Don Garcias and Don Alphonfo my heirs.
"Dispatch a servant as soon as you can with her

refolution, that I may not keep this young man in suspense, or feel that upbraiding in

" my own mind, with which I have been dif-

" quieted for many months."

The answer arrived in a reasonable space, and was entirely agreeable to Don Philip, who after he had explained himself to Don Alphonso, sent him before to his house in the country with orders that the necessary preparations should be made for the celebration of the marriage, the evening be came back from Lifbon. He flaved in that city about three weeks, in order to cancel the former dispositions he had made, and to fettle things in the manner he defigned; in which he met with some opposition, that displeased him not a little, from his relations, fo that he was obliged to have recourse to his interest at court, by which having carried his point he returned home, and having had the fatisfaction of feeing his daughter espoused to Don Alphonso, he quickly after fell fick and died. The marriage of Don Garcias with Elvira was thereupon foon declared. Don Alphonfo obliged him to accept of a confiderable fum of money as a fortune with that lady, and having disposed of the best part of his jewels, he ransomed twenty Portuguese flaves that were in captivity at Algiers, directed that the body of his friend Manuel, who died fome

cef-

II

my

will

ake

eirs.

her

ung

dif-

and

fter

ent

or-

be

the

ved

an-

in fed

he

at

reof fo,

on

IC-

ne

eft

efe

ed

ed

ne

fome time before, should be brought over and deposited in the same vault with that of his father; and bestowed five thousand crusadoes on the monastery where his sister was a nun.

I perceive that the night is farther advanced than I expected, I heartily ask pardon for having trespassed on your patience, if through want of ability or a due acquaintance with the art of composition, I have not brought my materials within fo narrow a compass as I ought to have done. But I flatter myself that the story is not unworthy your notice, and that in favour of fo many virtuous persons, you will excuse the defects of him who undertook to celebrate their actions, the worth of which he felt with a degree of force, which he thought would have enabled him to express them better. As they are, he leaves them to your remembrance and reflections which will fupply his infufficiency, and attone likewise for any want of sentiment or harmony that may appear in these verses, which are the effects of lady Constantia's commands, and of that warmth of mind with which their author laboured to fupply his fmall acquaintance with the muses.

1.

Who steels his breast, with virtue's fervent love,
And scorns on meaner things to cast his eye,
From ev'ry turn of fortune must improve,
By chance adverse and by prosperity,

Whom threats can't awe or smoothest words engage, All omens, good, to such a man presage.

to virigous minus

into delice II. and adire

If low his lot, his soul will yet be great,
As di'monds sparkle tho' enchas'd in lead,
His actions noble in a mean estate,
By honour taught not by convenience bred,
While titles, fools, and wealth undoes the sot,
His honest deeds shall dignify his cot.

III.

Should fortune tempt him with fallacious smiles,
To purchase profit by some high offence,
Safe in his choice uninjured by her wiles,
He knows that peace is better far than pence.
Content makes little, wealth; defends from need,
Who parts with innocence is poor indeed.

which wall supply infasticiency

Unenvied, he the rife of others sees,

Unmov'd by malice, tho' he suffer wrong,
Submits to all that providence decrees,

Indifferent whether life be short or long.

Hopes for the future, fears not for the past,
Nor dreads the present hour should be his last.

V.

Brave if an honest cause demands his sword,

His bosom open to a gen'rous stame,

True in his love, and faithful to his word,

Tho' not aspiring, not averse to same;

Secure if Zephyrs blow, or Boreas rage,

All omens good to virtuous minds presage.

I perceive, nephew, faid Sir Lawrence, that all the virtue and discretion is on the fide of the young men, in your relation all the mistakes and defects in the old. You know what the lion faid in the fable, that as men not lions were flatuaries, we frequently fee heroes with the king of beafts at their feet, tho' perhaps that is not altogether according to nature. Your obfervation is very shrewd, faid Captain Courtly, and yet give me leave to fay, that my friend is not in the wrong. The discretion of Alphonso is attributed to his education by Don Antonio, and the generofity of Garcias is but the copy of the noble fentiments of Don Philip. Men have their foibles in all feafons of life, and as neither of the old gentlemen are charged with vices, I cannot think their characters unnatural. I am entirely of your opinion, faid lady Confantia, and give me leave to add, that courage and generofity are the proper virtues of youth, the filial reverence of Alphonso for his father's memory is very affecting, and the emulation which it excites in Elvira equally just and judicious.

I must own, said Mrs. Anguish, that the sentiments are very fuitable to those of the Portuguese nation, and more especially that harsh kind of condescension which Don Philip expresses for his daughter. It is the true temper of a man of quality in that country. I admire, added Calista, the sincerity of Don Garcias in his friendship, and his falling in love with Elvira for shewing a spirit so much superior to her circumstances. His own disinterestedness made him approve hers, and the esteem one has for a beautiful person is very soon converted into tendernefs.

94 Fortitude surpaffes Fortune ; &c.

derness. True cousin, added Charlotte, but these were sit employments for minds undisturbed by adversity, for my own part the steadiness of Don Alphonso is what affects me most. His behaviour is singular but not improbable, and the his passion for Theresa be violent, yet it hurries him into nothing, either indecent or inconsistent. It is pretty late, interrupted Beaumont, and therefore I will give my opinion in sew words. The story pleases me throughout, and yet I cannot help hoping that Calista's will please me still more, I shall be impatient till the event consistent my prediction. Come, gentlemen, let us wish the ladies good night.

nation of the old gairlomen and charged with your, I carnot think their characters unpatural, an emissiy of your opinion, that last Continuit, and give me leave to add, that courage and gracro as are the proper virtues of yours, the ideal reverence of Alphonio for his father's memory is very affecting, and the emission which it exerces in fivire coursily just and justi-

I made our, faid Mrs. Anguals, that the lentifiance is and very fairable to note of the Portistics, nation, and make reactally that hards sind of condescention which Don Philip expectes for his daughter. It is the true temper of a man of quality in that country. I admire, added Califia, the incertify of Don Garcius in his stiendhip, and his falling in love with cause as Flowing a fairt to much toperior to not circumfactures. His own admired santes made

derniefs.



THE

HEROICK HUSBAND; OR. THE

MOURNING BEAUTY.

An ITALIAN HISTORY.



t

HE company came together this T co as the wet weather had prevented their having any vifitors. As foon therefore as the candles were placed, the fire made up, and the fervants

withdrawn, lady Constantia said to Calista, come niece, let us now hear this performance of yours which has coft thee so much pains, and of which you have made fuch a fecret, that if Charlotte and I had been dying of impatience, you did not discover the least disposition to favour us with a reprieve. Let us have it, my dear, that we may fee the fruits of those studies, which tho' I could never absolutely condemn, yet you know I never highly approved. We shall now have an opportunity of feeing whether your bookishness has affifted your genius. If I had imagined, Madam,

Madam, replied Califta blufhing, that your ladyship had in any degree disapproved those amusements to which you are pleased to give the name of studies, I had deferted them long ago; but as you cautioned me against keeping too much company, and as you allowed me but certain hours to work, time would have hung upon my hands, if I had not made use of your permission to divert myself in your closet. Very well Califta, returned lady Constantia, the season is arrived when we are to have a share in your diversions, and depend upon it, if you deserve them, there is nobody here that is not perfectly well disposed to give you all the praises you can wish. My story, said Calista, after paying her respects first to her aunt, and then to all who were prefent, if it has any merit must derive it either from truth, for in that it is faid to be founded, or from the fertile invention of another from whom I borrowed it, the choice of it is all that I can claim, and if I do not disfigure it extreme ly in my manner of telling, I should hope it will not prove difagreeable. The moral if I have not utterly mistaken the sense falls within the compals of this line.

A fingle fault may num'rous mischiefs cause.

Amongst the few countries which the Venetians still preserve in the Archipelago, that of Tine anciently called Tenos is in point of extent and fertility by much the most considerable, and the proveditore or governor lives there with great fplendor, tho' he is subject to the general of the islands who resides at Suda, which is little better than a barren rock, but lying not far from , maball

from Candia is more confidered by the republick from the hopes they still retain of recovering some time or other that important country, if therefore the latter command be more honourable, the former is both more profitable and more pleasant, at least it was so heretofore when these islands were in a better condition, when the trade of the inhabitants was more extensive, and the reputation of the republick sustained that of their subjects, so as to render them respected

by all their neighbours.

· la-

hose

the

go;

uch

tain

my

fion

Ca-

ar-

di-

em.

vell

ish.

ects

re-

her

ed,

om

hat

ne.

vill

not

m-

le-

of

X-

le,

th

ral

t-

ar

m

In those times it was held no discredit even to the best families in Venice, but on the contrary esteemed an honour to intrust them with the care of this island, tho' now when the love of ease and luxury prevails, it is considered as a kind of banishment. Signior Pietro Foscarini, the younger brother of an illustrious family, once held that post, and discharged it with honour. He carried thither his lady, who was also of one of the first families in Venice, his two fons Francisco and Julio, young men of great hopes, and his little daughter Sophronia, who was about nine years old. In a short time after his arrival the lieutenant of the fortress, and the next in command to himfelf, died, upon which, as was natural, he endeavoured to procure that post for a friend of his; but the Venetian general at Suda was no fooner informed it was vacant, than he fent thither in that quality, Signior Scipio Montalto an Albanese, one who had served the State of Venice for many years with great fidelity and reputation, and whose merit, as he informed the proveditore by letter, might justly have intituled him to much higher preferment. This Signior Foscarini did not deny, but wished that either VOL. I. justice

justice or favour had found him an employment fuitable to his deferts in some other place, and had thereby left him the choice of his own officer; which tho' it might not have been better in itself, would however have given him much more fatisfaction.

It was for this reason, and for this reason only that he received Montalto but coldly, when he presented the general's letter. Yet as he was conscious to himself that this prejudice was bee neath him, he endeavoured to conceal it, not from that motive only, but because an open dispute between them might be detrimental to the flate. Montalto was a brave rough foldier, one who despised intrigues, and had so little notion of envy or malicious piques, that he took it for granted the proveditore was the best friend he had in the world. He brought with him likewise his wife. who was a Venetian lady of quality, and had in her youth been bred up in the same convent with the lady Foscarini, who not entering at all into her husband's fentiments, looked upon this as a very fortunate event, and provided for Signior -Montalto a fine house in the town of St. Nicolo. the garden of which joined to their own.

It is requisite to observe, that the fortress, in which is the governor's palace, stands upon a very high rock at a considerable distance from the town then not very remarkable, much less so now, but heretofore was a famous city, out of the ruins of which most of the modern house have been erected. The proveditore or his lieutenant resided alternately in the fortress, and when one was there, the other lived with his family in the town. This had a good effect, in preventing the governor's secret dislike from appearing,

ment

and

off.

better

much

only

n he

e was

from

State.

of en-

anted in the

Wife,

ad in

with

1 into

is as a

icolo,

fs, in

from

h less

- out

noules

s lieu-

and

nis fa-

et, in

m ap-

aring,

pearing, because they were seldom there together; sometimes however they were, more especially, when the Turkish sleets were in the Archipelago, and the island consequently in a degree of danger, when the governor in right of his post would frequently, under different pretences, put his lieutenant upon hard and disagreeable services, which however he performed with such punctuality, that the Signior Foscarini would not have been displeased with, but rather sought an opportunity to chide him, it was never in his power; yet this circumstance did not remove his distaste, and there were others which, without any cause, served to increase it.

At fuch time as his fons were with the proveditore in the castle, they continually affected the company of Montalto, who not only shewed them all the respect due to their birth, but as much affection as if they had been his own, improved them in their exercises, taught them the use of arms, and when upon any suspicion of the infidels landing, the inhabitants of the island were alarmed, carried them with him in his expeditions to fcour the country. These young men therefore were continually commending him to their father, who heard them with a filent discontent, for he was ashamed to betray his weakness to his children, and could not find in his heart to forbid them the company of a man, from whose conversation and example they gathered daily advantages. On the other hand, when he was with his family in the town, he faw the two ladies live like fifters, and his little daughter, born on the fame day with Montalto's only fon Ascanio, playing with him in the garden

den with that innocent delight which was natu-

ral to their tender years.

In this fituation things continued for a long time, till one day, when the proveditore was alone with his fon Francisco, and observing a fine scymitar by his side, he asked him how he came by it; to which he answered it was a prefent from Montalto. The reply his father made was fo harsh, that the young man with tears begged leave to return it, which however the proveditore would not permit, adding however that it was not agreeable to him, he should receive prefents of fuch value, more especially from his inferior officer. Francisco had all the sagacity of a Venetian, he penetrated his father's disposition from that moment, and took care to avoid giving him the smallest degree of offence. It was with some difficulty that he infinuated to his brother Julio the necessity of observing the fame conduct; " the proveditore, faid he, my " dear brother, is our father, we must accom-" modate ourselves to his humours, but at the ss fame time we must not forget that Montalto is our common friend. It is to him we owe the figure we now make, and the great respect se that is every where paid us in the island; we were before treated only as the fons of the governor, we are now beloved and esteemed

Julio, who was of a frank and open temper, was frequently at a loss to excuse himself from accepting those favours which Montalto, who was both generous and rich, endeavoured often to force upon him. Observing at length that he took it ill, the ingenuous young man, unable to bear the imputation of ingratitude, plainly told

told him the reason. Montalto after musing a little while embraced him tenderly, and then broke out into these expressions. " If I had not " been a blockhead, faid he, I might have dif-" cerned this long ago, and have spared you, my " child, this uneafy discovery. But what figure-" fies it? He is proveditore, I am his lieutenant, " you are his fon, obedience is both our duties; " if we cannot make things better, at least let " us try to keep them from growing worfe. " love you and your brother fo well, that I must " love the proveditore for being your father, " and will henceforth pay him as much fubmif-" fion as if he was mine, tho' I think there is " no great difference in our ages. Come Julio, " don't be melancholy, it is a misfortune to us, " but it is much more fo to him, and for all our " fakes it must be our study to moderate it."

Signior Foscarini was in some measure, but not wholly the dupe of this contrivance, he faw the referve with which his fons behaved to Montalto with a secret satisfaction, but he was far from being pleafed with the extraordinary affiduity of the latter. On certain occasions he endeavoured to put his patience to the test, but it was in vain, Montalto was always upon his guard, and that to fuch a degree, that Signior Foscarini could not help fometimes faying, " why must you be " ever in the right, Montalto?" After which for a little while his temper feemed to be changed, but by degrees the old humour returned now and then with unufual vehemence. Yet when the governor was at St. Nicolo, and Montalto out of his fight, he had not the least fourness in his disposition, but spent his time very agreeably in directing his workmen, whom he employed con-F tinually

tinually in making fome alteration or other in his house or in his gardens. He would likewise v. fit those of Montalto, which tho' less regular and magnificent were as pleafing, and the fruit in much greater perfection than his own, because Montalto and his son diverted themselves with gardening, did much with their own hands. and faw all with their own eyes. He delighted also to hear Ascanio touch the lute, which he did to great perfection, accompanying it with Greek fongs, having learned the vulgar language amongst the inhabitants, and the school Greek from the Jesuits. When he was in very good humour, he would fend for his lady and Sophroma, who had a delicate ear and an excellent voice, and in this way near eight years paffed without

any extraordinary accident.

At the end of this time an epidemic diftemper broke out in the island, by which Montalto loft his wife, which tho' he bore with exterior firmness, yet it gave so deep a wound to his mind, that a few months after he was likewife taken ill. He then perceived that his end was near, and having first fent for Francisco and Julio, he took leave of them in a fhort and pathetic speech, in which he recommended to them, love for their country, duty to their father, and kindness to his son, whom he left to their pro-tection. He would have spoken to the proveditore, but that he knew he could not leave the fortress. When he was dying he faid to Ascanio, " love the proveditore's family, and love him too, may heaven defend thee from inhe-" riting thy father's misfortune." He could fay no more, and Ascanio very imperfectly comprehended what he did fay, as appeared upon his first

first feeing the governor, at whose feet he fell, and with a flood of tears said, "I have lost "Montalto, my Lord, you must be my father:" to which he answered coldly, "I have children "of my own." Francisco and Julio, who stood by, perceiving how great an impression this made on the young man's spirits, took him up and em-

braced him tenderly.

Within three months after the decease of Montalto, a fmall galley arrived from Venice with the news that Signior Foscarini's elder brother was dead, by which he inherited a vast estate; and he was farther informed, that Signior Paruta was appointed his fuccessor and would speedily arrive. This filled the governor and his family with joy, Sophronia only excepted, between whom and Ascanio the friendship of their childhood had subsisted till it ripened into passion. She was the first to communicate this news to her lover, whom the met fecretly in a grotto, that he had wrought with his own hands under a little pavilion that feparated their gardens, and threw him into fuch a fit of despair, as had like to have caused him his life. He continued ill for feveral days, and the concern which this gave Sophronia made Julio guess at their sentiments for each other. He took the first opportunity of speaking to Sophronia, and without expecting a confession, told her that nobody could be more sensible than he of Ascanio's merit, yet he should be forry if she had any tenderness for him, fince it was impossible to prevail upon their father to hear of fuch an alliance, more especially, now his fortune was raifed fo much beyond what it was, and with it the fenfe of his superior station.

She answered only by her tears, and by a sigh which sufficiently expressed her meaning. Julio communicated what he had faid, and what he had discovered to Francisco, who approved his conduct, but told him that he pitied Ascanio, and that in his judgment the fon of Montalto deferved any woman in Venice. He went to visit that unfortunate young man, and found him weak in his body, and disturbed in his mind; he laboured all he could to comfort him, and told him when he took his leave, " your father re-" commended you to my protection, I owe too " much to his memory, not to afford it you " upon all occasions, you may rely upon my " friendship in every circumstance, and it must "depend upon your own prudence what use to " make of this promife, from the exact obser-" vance of which I will never swerve." Ascanie thanked him with tears in his eyes, and this affurance contributed not a little to his recovery. Tulio likewise made him a visit, in which he infinuated to him that he was not ignorant of his affection for his fifter, but he gave him to understand that this was a secret that must not reach-Foscarini's ears; " for, said he, since the death of your father you are no longer a favourite, " and therefore beware how you expose your-" felf or Sophronia to his refentment."

At this juncture, Signior Paruta arrived with a fmall fquadron of gallies, and three companies of foot on board. He debarked his troops on the other fide of the island, because the harbour of St. Nicolo is not either fafe or spacious. Some of the country people brought the news to Signior Foscarini, before he had any advice from the new proveditore, at which he took umbrage,

and

and having raifed the militia in the adjacent villages, marched at the head of fifteen hundred men well armed and well disciplined, as if he had fuspected an invasion. Signior Paruta, who was an old officer, was not at all pleafed with this behaviour, and much less with arresting a captain whom he had fent express with Signior Foscarini's pacquet, and a copy of his own commission. He had not Montalto's calmness, and therefore dispatched a trumpet to the old proveditore with orders to difmiss his troops, and depart the island in twenty four hours under the feverest penalties. He soon saw himself obliged to conform, for as the trumpet made no fecret of his errand, the troops without ceremony marched back to their respective villages, and left him with his fons and domesticks to return to St. Nicolo, where the new governor arrived the next morning, and took poffession of the fortress. An hour after he repeated his message, adding, that one of the gallies was now at the mouth of the port, and that he expected he should go on board without delay. Signior Foscarini was exceedingly piqued at this treatment, and ordered all his effects, which were already packed up, to be fent on board as fast as possible.

But when his family came to embark, Sophronia was missing, and upon enquiry he was informed, that when he marched with his troops, Ascanio, under pretence of providing for her safety, had carried her away. In the heat of his resentment, he wrote a very angry letter to Signior Paruta, demanding that his daughter should be sent on board, and Ascanio punished as a ravisher. The new governor wrote him for answer, that he was forry he could not grant his request, that

the young lady was married, that Afcanio had demanded his protection, and that he could not proceed against either, without an order from the State of Venice. Signior Foscarini as soon as he had received this letter weighed anchor, and proceeded on his voyage for Venice, where he fafely arrived. He would have profecuted Ascanio on his first coming, if his fons had not represented to him that it would be more for the honour of the family to conceal his misfortune, and his wife fuggested, that as the new governor of Tine was not his friend, they would foon have notice of any order he could procure, and might shelter themselves in any of the adjacent illands. He gave no answer at all to these infinuations, but he commenced no profecution, and for the space of fix years never mentioned his daughter's name, any more than if she had been dead; fo that his family thought that he had first stifled his resentment thro' pride, and that time had in some measure wore it out.

There was some degree of artifice in the manner in which Ascanio had prevailed upon Sophronia to leave her father's house. Her mother was at the fortress directing the removal of their effects, her brothers attending their father with his little army, when Afcanio alarmed her with the apprehension of the Turks being in fight of the place, and engaged her to fly with him and his fervants to the Greek villages on the other fide of the island. The next day when she knew the truth, the was equally loth to leave Afcanio for ever, and afraid to return to her offended father; fo that without much difficulty, her lover prevailed upon her to become his wife. She was however far from forgiving herfelf for this breach of

of obedience, and tho' Ascanio was one of the fondest and best of husbands, yet the thoughts of it hung always heavy on her mind. When he went to the new governor to desire his protection, he told him he might depend upon it, advising him to bring his wife into the fortress, giving directions that he should lodge in his father's apartment, shewing him so much civility and respect, that both Ascanio and Sophronia were not a little surprized, as not being able to divine the motive.

After the proveditore had changed the garrifon, and embarked the troops that had ferved under his predeceffor for Cerigo and other islands, and after the ceremony of finging Te Deum on taking possession of his government, he went to make Ascanio a visit, who received him with all the deference and duty imaginable, and presented to him Sophronia. As foon as they were alone, Ascanio, said the proveditore, " I am a stranger " to you, but I should not have been so to your " father, to the command of whose company I " fucceeded, at Suda; I made my first campaign " under him, and therefore you must consider " me as an old friend, tho' I am but a new ac-" quaintance. The general gave me leave to " name my own lieutenant, and I am fure he " will be well fatisfied when he knows that I " have appointed you to fucceed your father." Ascanio was going to rife in order to pay him his thanks, " hold my friend, faid he, as I have " no family, I give you the governor's house at " St. Nicolo, at least so long as I hold this post, " when I go to take the air in the country it " shall be in the Greek villages, that I may the " fooner become acquainted with the whole ex-66 tent

"tent of the island." Signior Montalto and his spouse were at a loss to express their gratitude, and in amaze to find themselves in a situation that exceeded their utmost wishes.

About the close of the first year after their marriage, Sophronia was brought to bed of a daughter, to whom Ascanio gave the name of Arpasia, and as they had no other child in the space of five years, there is no wonder that they were extravagantly fond of her. Her beauty and her wit furpassed her age, and it was imposfible for parents to be happier, or a child better educated than she was: but in the midst of this felicity, Sophronia had fometimes deep fits of melancholy, when the reflected on her being cut off entirely from her family, of whom she had fcarce heard any news fince they went to Venice. She took however all the pains imaginable to conceal her chagrin from her husband, whose thoughts being entirely taken up with the discharge of his employment, and the care of his private concerns was as happy as a man could be, and often declared to his wife, that he had not an idea of prosperity beyond what they enjoyed; which however, as all fublunary happiness is uncertain, was speedily and fatally disturbed, and that too by a stroke which it was equally impossible for him either to foresee or prevent.

About four years after his return to Venice, Signior Foscarini lost his eldest son, and three years after the younger, both by malignant severs. He was extremely sensible of these missortunes, and his wife was inconsolable. In the depth of her affliction she passionately bewailed the absence of her daughter, "my sons, said she, have been taken from me by death, who

" is inexorable, but the loss of my daughter is "entirely owing to the severity of your tem"per." Signior Foscarini seemed to be deeply affected with what she said, but made her no answer. Some days after he went over to the terra firma, under pretence of diverting himself at an estate he had there, where he said he proposed to stay a month or six weeks; but instead of going thither he went to Leghorn, where for a thousand sequins he prevailed upon the captain of a Corsair vessel to proceed with him on a se-

cret expedition into the arches.

Arriving on the coast of Tine, he surprized a poor peafant in the night, by whom he was informed that Montalto was in the fortress, and the governor at his house in one of the Greek This pleased him exceedingly. landed with twenty men near the wall of that which had been his own garden, and being well acquainted with all the avenues, eafily furprized Sophronia, who had fcarce time to put on her cloaths. As he was disguised in a Sclavonian habit with false mustachoes and a long beard, the had not the least knowledge of him, but imagined that herfelf and her daughter were to be carried into flavery. The fervants in the house made some refistance, and two of the Corfairs were wounded. Signior Foscarini pulled off part of his daughter's cloaths, and having dipped them in the blood of the wounded men left them upon the strand. He had scarce reached his boat before the whole town was alarmed and in motion, and Montalto with a hundred men fallied from the fortress, but the crew having cut the cable, the Corfair was quickly under fail and out of their reach. The next day vessels were dispatched dispatched on every side, but brought no satisfactory intelligence, assirming that no Turkish ship of any force had been seen from any of the

adjacent islands for many days.

It is impossible to express the forrow of Montalto, who concluded that his wife at least, if not his child, was murdered; and as the Corfairs had made no fcruple of taking any thing they could lay their fingers on, and as feveral of his fervants were wounded, he had not the leaft fufpicion that this blow was dealt from any other hands than that of the infidels; against whom his refentment was fo ftrong, that in spite of all the governor could fay he refigned his employment, and expended a confiderable part of his fortune in fitting out three small privateers, with which he cruized upon the Turks in hopes of hearing fome time or other news of his daughter, for as to his wife he never entertained a thought of her being alive.

When Signior Foscarini returned to Venice, and presented Sophronia to her mother, the furprize had like to have killed her, all the compliment her husband made, was, that she should take care how she next upbraided the feverity of his temper. Tho' it was fome confolation to the good old lady to fee her daughter and her granddaughter, yet the circumstances that attended their being restored to her, very sensibly diminished her pleasure. Sophronia bore this cruel reverse of fortune with constancy, avoided, as much as the was able, faying any thing that might trouble her parents, and employed the best part of her time in the education of her daughter. What will appear strange she readily gave Signior Foscarini a promise, that she would never

attempt

attempt to give her husband notice of what had befallen her; but it seems, that after maturely reflecting upon the consequences, it was a point

upon which she was before resolved.

Upon Arpafia's attaining the age of twelve, it was thought expedient that she should be fent to the convent of St. Clara where her mother had been educated. Before her departure, Sophronia repeated to her the story of her life, and closed it with this injunction, " be fure never to marry " without your father's confent, if you would " avoid a fate like mine." The poor child weeping, and without remembring how improbable it was she should ever see her father, promifed all that her mother exacted in the most folemn manner. She thought herfelf much eafier in the convent, than in her grandfather's family, and as the faw her mother frequently, her spirits recovered their natural activity, and she quickly attracted the affection as well as attention of all the young ladies her companions. Her amazing genius for poetry, and happy ear for mulick, which were her father's talents, struck every body with admiration, and procured her the appellation of the adorable Arpalia; as her mother, who went constantly in the dress of a widow, and whose missortunes had not in the least diminished her charms, was by the Venetian ladies stiled the mourning beauty, tho' the relation of her diffress was imperfectly indeed, if at all known, the utmost pains being taken in the family to prevent any discourse about it, and most of the old servants difmiffed upon her being brought home.

A new war breaking out with the Turks, a Piedmontese nobleman, whose merit had advanced him to a high command in the Venetian troops,

proposed

proposed an attempt upon the city of Canea in the island of Candy, which was so well concerted, that it was thought impossible it should fail. The fenate cast their eyes upon Signior Foscarini, to command a squadron of gallies which were to be employed in this expedition. and tho' he pleaded his age and infirmities as an excuse, yet it was to no purpose, they knew his courage and experience, for tho' he went with reluctancy, he was obliged to embark when the gallies were ready to fail. By that time the fleet reached Suda, all the privateers in the arches joined the navy, and amongst the rest Signior Montalto with nine vessels, five of which were his own, and the other four voluntarily obeyed his orders upon this occasion. The Marquis Vila, who was the general, landed with five thoufand men and encamped before the city; but finding himself too weak, he demanded a reinforcement from the fleet, upon which Signior Foscarini landed with seven hundred seamen. The privateers to diffract the enemy as much as possible, being ordered to alarm the coast.

The evening of that very day, the Turks with a fuperior force attacked the Marquis in his entrenchments, and after an obstinate resistance gained a compleat victory. Signior Foscarini who with his seamen endeavoured to cover the retreat, was after a gallant defence taken prisoner, and carried to a village upon the coast. In the night Montalto landed, knowing nothing of what had happened, attacked the village, drove out the Turks, and with an immense booty, part of which had been before taken from the Christians, brought thirteen Venetians whom he had delivered on board his vessels. As those about

d

r

n

his person treated Signior Foscarini with the title of excellency, Montalto without feeing him, ordered he should be accommodated on board his thip, and in his cabin. A few hours after they had news of the defeat upon which they weighed. anchor and failed for Suda. The next morning when he went to pay his respects to the admiral of the gallies, he was aftonished to see Signior Foscarini, who did not recollect him till he heard that his name was Montalto, fo much was he altered by his cares and fatigues. He immediately went up to him, and after a ceremonious compliment whispered softly in his ear, " there " is no need these people should be acquainted "with our furprize." Montalto made a low obeifance and took his leave. When the fquadron joined the fleet, Signior Foscarini went on board his own galley without fo much as fpeaking to his fon in law, who was not very defirous on his fide of a second interview. The first news the admiral heard when he came on board, was, that his captain was killed in the engagement, upon which he immediately fent for Montalto and bestow'd on him the command. In their return to Venice he gave him the history of his expedition to Tine, adding at the close of it, " you robbed me of my daughter, and I " have robbed you of yours, heaven it feems " will not fuffer us to be any longer enemies, " for the short remainder of my life, Montalto, " you shall be my friend and my fon."

The short captivity of Foscarini was in many respects one of the happiest incidents in his life, as it effectually secured his reputation, and procured him thanks for his services, tho' they had not been attended with success. As soon as the

fleet was laid up he returned to his own palace, but remembring what happened when he brought Sophronia thither, he would not introduce Montalto till three days after his mother in law and his wife had been informed of the adventure, and even then the lady Foscarini saw him first, and after some time carried him to her daughter's apartment, where notwithstanding these precautions the no fooner beheld him, than the fell in a fwoon at his feet. Proper methods being used the quickly recovered, and in a few days after Arpafia was brought home to share in the gene-

0

ral joy. When the peace of the family was in some measure fettled, Sophronia addressed herself to her father, and told him there was formething still to be done to render their satisfaction compleat. " That cannot depend upon me, an-" fwered Signior Foscarini, fince I am already " compleatly fatisfied; in Montalto I have both "my fons, and you are my only daughter, " what would you give me more?" " A grand-" fon, replied Sophronia, Arpafia is now above of fourteen, and Signior Morofini, who is one " of the most accomplished cavaliers in Venice, is her declared admirer, but warned by my example, Arpafia would never permit his vi-" fits. In that, faid Signior Foscarini, you are " a little to blame, daughter, Morofini is of too " great quality, not to be received with respect where-ever he pays his addresses. With her " father's confent it may be fo, replied Sophroor nia, but not without if he were a prince. My " affent, said Montalto modestly, will always attend that of my father, yet must we not " have Arpasia's too? by all means said the old ht

d

d

d

S

T.

How fweet the evening of a summer's day!
When gentle breezes fan the yielding air,
When Phæbus gilds the clouds with varied ray,
And waters murmur thro' the meadows fair.

II.

This poize of elements destroy'd, how soon!
The seene is chang'd and nature all at strife?
If passion, moral harmony untune,
Nor less tempestuous is the day of life.

III.

Winds rove refiftless when they're once unbound, From sable clouds sulphureous lightnings break, Th' ecchoing hills repeat the thunder's sound Rills rise to torrents, stubborn forests quake.

IV.

Affrighting prospect! from a cause conceased,
For nature's works are little known to man,
But moral truths are to his thought reveal'd,
That in his lot he may his conduct scan.
V. To

V.

To virtue's system while our minds are true, Each well meant step its proper blessing draws: Darkling we wander if we drop this clue, A single fault may num'rous mischies cause.

Surprizingly well, cried lady Constantia, and you have now nothing to fear, but that I should confine you to the closet; I protest I suspected Beaumont's compliment last night would have been prejudicial to you, but at this rate he may fet up for a prophet. One thing however, miftress authoress, I must recommend to your serious meditation. After such a proof as this of your discernment and good sense, the slightest failing would be inexcuseable; when people are very rational in their discourses, it is expected they should be no less correct in their conduct; that's all, Calista. Mine, Madam, said that young lady blushing, has a double guard, the respect I owe to the principles infused by a good education, and the deep fenfe I should have of giving you the least cause of displeasure. That is handfomely faid, returned Sir Lawrence, and I vow I never heard a prettier story in my life. have told it with great elegance, but I dare fay you did not invent it, that character of Foscarini is very natural, irregularly great, and with fomething noble even in his weakneffes. thinks I take a pleasure in hearing that he lived fo long after his troubles, and had time to relish his own happiness, and that of his family.

I can hardly pardon, said Mrs Anguish, Sophronia's neglect of her husband, at the same

time

time that I wonderfully admire the new turn it gave his disposition in making him become a Corfair, that his thoughts might find employment in gratifying his refentment. His invincible affection for a wife, whom he imagined dead, is very heroic, and a perfect contrast to that kind of tenderness, expressed while he was happy in possessing her. We see from hence, that the most active tempers may be fixed by love, and that the object of their passion being removed, that humour is discovered which lay entirely hid before. It was not his villa and his gardens, or a mind content with the conveniences of life which constituted his felicity, but Sophronia who gave a value to thefe. Having loft her and the dear pledge of his love, that eafe became a curfe which was before a bleffing, and all those places were abhorred, which had been the witnesses of his former delight. You bear hard, Madam, replied Courtly, on the prudence of Sophronia, at the same time that you do justice to her husband. What you stile neglect was the effects of refignation, she discerned that a new train of evils might fpring from any intimation she could give him of her being alive, and therefore fubmitting to the chastisement of heaven for her disobedience, the patiently expected her deliverance.

Mr. Pensive approved this solution, and Beaumont likewise thought it very just. In this respect, said he, the Italians are apt to refine so much in pieces even of this nature, that it is mighty easy for persons of a quick temper to mistake for an egregious sault what in reality is a beauty. I have often wondered that the scenes of such histories are not more frequently laid in these islands, where adventures more surprizing

than

than any Calista has related are not at all uncommon. They may be as you say, Sir, continued Charlotte, the properest theatres that can be for such tragical events, but surely one would chuse rather to live in any other country, let the climate be ever so sine, the soil ever so rich, or its products ever so valuable. Bless me, to be constantly within the reach of danger, and not to be a moment free from terror, must destroy all sense of pleasure even in paradise!

Alas, returned Beaumont, if we are too quick fighted, Charlotte, this will be the case in every country. We are no where free from danger, and consequently no where exempt from terror. To ballance this, it is our business to gain a true notion of pleasure, in what it consists, and how far it is attainable. With these qualifications, perhaps it will be found that it is every where alike within our reach, it was in the evening of Fofcarini's life that he was happy, the felicity of Arpafia displayed itself with her dawn, all fexes and ages tafte happiness when they enjoy innocence. Those who complain that they pursue pleasure to no purpose, know not what they feek, and I cannot figure to myself a story more entertaining, or more infructive than might be built upon this maxim. Have a care, my friend, cried captain Courtly, my turn is to morrow, how do you know that I have not fomewhat of this fort in my head, let us return our thanks to Califta for having not only fatisfied but exceeded our wishes, and let Miss Charlotte and I study to make her some amends.

FEMALE REVENGE; OR. THE

FORCE of DESTINY.
From the French.

HEN lady Constantia had taken her seat, and those who composed her little assembly discovered attention in their looks, she with great kindness and civility desired captain Courtly to gratify their impatience by the

n-in ld

1, 0 d

.

)

kindness and civility desired captain Courtly to gratify their impatience by the recital of whatever he had prepared for their entertainment, I persuade myself, continued her ladyship, that a gentleman of your quick parts and polite education, cannot fail of having dedicated fome of your time to the study of human nature and the passions, and I am still the farther convinced that I do not at all flatter you in this respect, because it has been my constant observation that calmness of mind, a disposition to please, and what is truly stiled good breeding can never be obtained without this talent. make no doubt therefore that we shall receive much information, as well as be highly diverted by what you have to fay, but methinks, I read fome

h

di

0

cl

fo

b

tİ

h

th

tl

tl

th

to

fo

fo

21

th

fome uneafiness in the eyes of the company, while by an impertinent compliment, I detain them from what would give true satisfaction and

pleafure.

Your ladyship, returned captain Courtly, rifing up and bowing, does me too much honour, and if those who are present for whom I have the utmost deference and esteem, shall have the goodness to excuse what I have to offer after the judicious and excellent things they have heard, it will be as much as I can juftly expect, and must flow entirely from their indulgence. Most of the finister accidents in human life, which are generally termed misfortunes, are, if I am not egregiously mistaken, the effects of our own misconduct and incorrigible folly; if the vanity of the fufferers would permit them to discern, it is in reality the cause of all, that from an idle prepossession in favour of themselves they are pleased to ascribe to destiny or fate. This I think will in some measure appear from what I am going to relate, and therefore my motto shall be,

He Shipwreck feeks who learns not how to steer.

Amongst the great number of rich merchants and eminent manufacturers who were expelled France in consequence of the revocation of the edict of Nantes, was Mr. Joachim le Brun, who had acquired a considerable fortune in a particular branch of the filk manufacture at Lyons. He withdrew into the dominions of one of the maritime powers, and being very active and industrious, and having also a true commercial genius, in the space of a few years acquired immense riches. His wife being sickly, he carried her

But

her to Aix la Chapelle, rather with a view to divert her melancholy, than with any great hopes of her recovery; but whether the journey, the change of air, or the waters wrought that effect, so it was that she became perfectly well, and brought him the next year a son, the only child they ever had, tho' she was near forty even by

her own computation.

VOL. I.

One may eafily imagine that persons in their flation, to whom fortune had been profuse of her favours, were excessively fond of a child born to them in the decline of life, and who was to inherit all their riches. They spared no pairls for the preservation of his health, or for his education; and when he arrived at twelve years of age, it was ftrongly debated whether he should be fent to the university, in order to qualify him for fome learned profession; or whether they should content themselves with having him taught his exercises, the modern languages, and such other accomplishments as are thought most expedient for the service of those who are to be brought early into the world. His father, who was a man of great vivacity, determined in favour of the latter, having a secret intention to put him into the army, not without hopes of feeing him at the head of a regiment, and in the high foad to be a general officer even before his death. But he did not open his whole scheme to his wife, for fear that her fondness for her boy might unluckily prove the means of spoiling his fortune, of which he had formed in his own mind fo ftrong a notion, that he looked upon his fon's arriving at a high command in the army, as a thing no less certain than his own prodigious succels in trade. The description of the colorest cels in trade.

By that time he was fixteen, young le Brun was a compleat petit maitre in his understanding, acquifitions and drefs. He came to pass a small time at home, and being amply supplied with money by his mother, gave into all the foppith schemes of pleasure proposed by his companions, who were also in a great measure his flatterers, because he bore the best part of their expences. Amongst other ingenious frolicks, he took it into his head to make love to his mother's companion, a maiden turned of thirty, whose name was Rivella. She was, though very artful, weak enough to think him in earnest, in confequence of which, the wrote him three or four prudiffs letters, which ferved him and his acquaintance to laugh at. This coming to Rivella's car, the came one morning into his chamber before he was dreffed, and told him, if he did not deliver her back her letters, the would acquaint his father with certain affaire, he was by no means willing should come to his knowledge; and thus the difentangled herfelf from an intrigue that afterwards gave our young adventurer no small disquiet 2130 2710 AVIV

1

1

t

8

V

fa

h

tt

ly

m

tr

The next year le Brun was sent to make the tour of Europe, under the care of a Swiss officer, who had been a captain in the Dutch service, had some learning, tolerable good sense, but from the ill usage he had met with in the world, of a splenetic disposition. His pupil and he quarrelled the first week, and differed more or less every day for the first twelvemonth they were together. It was however to this man he owed the figure he afterwards made in the world; for though his tutor's deficiencies were very considerable; yet being directly opposite to those of ke

M

Ille

th

9-

1-

115

S,

3.

y,

ry

in

10

115

-

1

ne

ld

Dy

V-

m

d-

ne

f,

e,

ut d,

1

re

ed

or G-

of

le

le Brun, they had a pretty good effect. captain was in hopes of an ample recompence for all his trouble, in case le Brun at his return anfwered his father's expectations, to which he honeftly bent all his endeavours, and by degrees wore off a little of his levity, and forced upon him a share of knowledge, he had otherwise never possessed. The youth had parts, several good qualities, and naturally but few vices. Vanity was his predominant folly; he had a frange defire of excelling in every thing, and a wonderful talent of imposing that excellence which he affumed upon all who were not perfeelly verfed in those things, in which he pretended to excel. He had a genteel person, an easy air, a fluent expression, a natural fund of complacency, and knew how to part with his money without being profuse. As he wanted a liberal education, it was impossible for him to become truly knowing; but by the help of a firong memory, and a dextrous display of what little he knew, he passed upon the generality of the world for a young man of universal intelligence and furprising abilities.

Such was the real character of le Brun, when he returned home, where he found his mother dead and his father inconsolable. The old man, who had left off trade for some time, was perfectly satisfied with the care the captain had taken of his son, who was indeed quite another creature than when he fell into his hands; and therefore highly deserved the reward of two thousand crowns, which old le Brun gave him for his trouble, as well as the sum of two hundred pistoles that remained of the money remitted them during their travels. In a short time after this, the father to

G 2

relieve

279....

relieve his melancholy; for what other purpose could a man have who was near feventy? thought proper to espouse Rivella, which was managed with fo much fecrecy, that the young foark had not the least notice of it, till she was intituled to call him fon. This no doubt nettled him not a little, but having fpent a full year in Italy, he had acquired a reasonable stock of distimulation, which enabled him to preferve appearances tolerably well. Rivella, who derived from nature more than he had attained by art, managed with like address, and persuading his father, that fo accomplished a person only lost his time at home, he was, to the amazement of his friends, fent over to France, and a commission procured for him in the army, which marshal Catinat then commanded in Italy, where he fignalized his courage upon feveral public occafions, and fought two or three duels with men, who were as vain of their birth as young le Brun was of his accomplishments; which with a natural contempt for each other, made them always quarrelfome.

But though he wanted not some powerful protectors, yet his situation was very unpleasant in the army; where his being of no samily, the son of a refugee, and affecting to live in a manner much superior to those of his rank, raised him abundance of enemies; he would gladly have resigned his commission, but was afraid of incurring his father's displeasure, and not without reason apprehensive of Rivella's influence. This cunning woman held a correspondence with an officer in the same regiment, who in the name of another person of much better character, wrote such letters concerning him to his

father,

father, as induced him to think of altering his will, and of leaving his fon only an annuity, being persuaded that his diffolute behaviour and extravagance, which however were very unjust imputations, would bring him to want bread. It happened very luckily for young le Brun, that having in a certain affair of consequence occasion to make use of the gentleman, whose name had been employed in this feigned correfpondence, he wrote his father a long letter, in which there were very high commendations of This letter was conveyed in the young man. the pacquet of a foreign minister, who delivered it with his own hand to old le Brun; and shewing him at the same time another letter from that gentleman to himself, he was so much amazed at the discovery of this vile contrivance, that he was taken ill in his chariot, and very near dying when he came home. The first thing he did was to fend for an old friend of his, to whom he delivered this epiftle, gave him a short state of the case, and desired him, if it was ever in his power, to make it known to his fon. This was the last act of his life, for a few minutes after he became speechless and died the next morning.

Rivella attempted to dispute the validity of his will, though by that she was to have the third part of his estate; and actually produced the draught of another, drawn by his own hand. But his friend being steady to his trust, and divulging the affair of the letter, Rivella was glad to submit, and to accept of what was much more than she deserved. The same person being extremely well acquainted with the old gentleman's affairs, and having received full power

y

S

9

 G_3

from

from young le Brun, quickly remitted him the best part of his share of his father's fortune, to the amount of two hundred thousand crowns; in return for which le Brun, by the dint of interest and money, procured leave to resign his commission to the younger brother of his trustee, who, though he had served long, and was a man of real merit, would in all probability never have obtained it, had it not been for this fortunate accident.

As he had now quitted the army with the title of colonel, to which that of lieutenant is very feldom added; and as he was mafter of so large a sum of money, he determined to think no more of a military life. He disposed therefore of his equipage and returned to Lyons, where he was extremely well received in the politest assemblies, and treated by every body with all the respect he could desire. The pleasure and amusements of that charming place, suited extremely well with his disposition, and he had no thoughts of leaving it, till the issue of an odd adventure made it expedient for him to remove; though a person of a different temper would probably have taken other measures.

There was a lady here, who though the affected to live concealed, was reputed to be a person of very great quality, as she was certainly of distinguished beauty and extraordinary abilities. The rumours that prevailed concerning her made colonel le Brun extremely desirous of being introduced to her; and as he had a very fertile imagination, and was exceedingly liberal on such occasions, it was not long before he succeeded in his design. His expectations were ery high; and what seldom happens, they were

h

1

1

C

Si

n

C

P

not at all disappointed; he found her amiable, and at the same time more sensible than she had been represented; so that at the very first interview he conceived a very high esteem for her, mixed with a degree of tenderness, though she was five or six years older than himself. The lady on her side received him with peculiar civility, and told him, when he took his leave, that she should be very well pleased, if while they both remained at Lyons, he would now and then savour her with his visits, which he very politely promised, and very punctually kept his word, as usually happens when men's inclina-

tions and engagements go together.

It was not long before the affected to make him her confident, the told him that the was of one of the first houses of the empire; and that having been ill treated by her nearest relations, he had an intention of going to Turin, which the had been obliged to postpone on account of the then fituation of public affairs. Her behaviour was in every respect suitable to her rank; her conversation was lively and agreeable, and the had fuch a fund of secret history of persons of the first distinction, as highly delighted the colonel, who had a particular liking to things of that kind. She artfully contrived to remove all scruples as to her veracity, by shewing him many private letters and papers, in respect to the lignatures of which he could not be eafily deceived. In short, he thought himself the happiest man in the world, though his respect refrained him from making any overtures to her; but in return for her confidence, he let her know that he was not a needy adventurer, but a person of a large fortune, which was altogether unnecessary, as her views were wholly on his

person.

After some weeks had passed in this manner, the lady began to abate a little of her referve. and the colonel, though with all imaginable marks of deference, intimated how great an impression she had made upon his heart. But as they had very different designs things went on but flowly: le Brun was vain and ambitious, had formed to himself strange schemes, and was very near being the dupe of his own pride. But the lady furnished him inadvertently with the means of escaping out of the snare. She defired him to procure a pass, from the duke of Vendofme; which he eafily obtained, and was delivered him by that prince's fecretary, who took Lyons in his way to Paris. As he was intimately acquainted with the colonel, he rallied him a little, upon his being fo well with fo fine a woman; le Brun, who perceived that he was acquainted with her history, resolved to leave no stone unturned to be well acquainted with it likewise; and knowing that this gentleman loved good cheer, made him a most magnificent supper, and drank pretty hard, which he could very well bear, though he was not inclined to fuch debauch.

When he saw his friend began to be elevated, he introduced the subject, which was the great object of his attention. "Bless me, cried the secretary, can there be any thing a secret to you, that regards the countes?" "I know, answered the colonel, that she is of such a family." "True, my friend, returned the secretary, and you know, I suppose, that she does no great honour to it." This amazed

lis

r,

le

as

n

S,

ıt

of

as

0

.

0

t

0

le Brun, but he kept his countenance, and with the help of another bottle, extracted a scene of intrigues more numerous than all the lady had This effectually cured him of his told him. paffion, which arose chiefly from his aspiring hopes of making a figure in the world, through the affiftance of a woman of fuch high birth, and who had fuch confiderable connections. Discerning therefore that these were all visions, and despiting himself for being such a fool as to be so long mistaken in reference to her real character, he resolved to send the pass in a respectful letter; in which he intimated, that an affair of great importance obliged him to fet out post for Paris, as he actually did the next day, under great discomposure of mind, and much worse fatisfied with himself than he had ever been.

On his arrival in that great city, he foon fell into good company, and as he made a figure, and was known to have a good fortune, he found himself speedily surrounded by a number of people, who called themselves his friends. spent his time very agreeably, was well received by the ladies, and had free access to some of the greatest families, where he was considered as a man of pleafure and expence, though neither of them was much his turn. He was indeed of fo inconstant and defultory a temper, that those who knew him best, were at a loss how to describe him. Sometimes he confined himself to his cabinet, and applied himself studioufly to modern history, in which he was well read. He had a taste for music, painting and poetry: he would now and then play in public places, and always with fuccess, though he had no great skill, and not a grain of art. It was for for this, however, that he was most remarkable; for whenever he won money of the ladies, he was sure to make them presents soon after, to a greater value; which proceeded from a disinterested generosity, since he embarked in sew or no intrigues, more especially after the affair at Lyons, which ran perpetually in his head, and gave him an unaccountable dissidence of the fex.

At last, however, he was caught; for going to dine one day at the house of a counsellor of the parliament of Paris, he faw there a niece of this gentleman, who was about eighteen, exquifitely beautiful, and modest to a fault, with whom he fell paffionately in love. He took pains however to be thoroughly informed, as to the lady's family and education, with which being entirely fatisfied, he did not much trouble himself about her fortune, though that too was far from being small. He applied himself to her uncle, and his propositions were well received; the young lady, at the instance of her relations, admitted of his addresses: but though he was very affiduous in his visits, yet he was far from being precipitate in the marriage treaty, which was at last concluded, under the firm persuasion that he had found the woman in the world, who was destined to make him happy. The beauty of her person did not affect him so much as the endowments of her mind; she had, or at least he thought so, good fense, a lively wit, and a ferenity of temper, which he flattered himfelf would last for ever.

He was of the same opinion for about fifteen months after they were married, during which they were the fondest couple in the world. But

e:

he

12

n-

10

at

nd

he

ng

of

of

h

0

T

n

0

f

t

our curious impertinent, taking it into his head to be more than ordinarily civil to fome ladies of diffinction, who were not thought veftals, his wife grew jealous; in which at first he had a fecret pleasure, but it did not continue long. He thought she would have given herself up to fpleen, melancholy, and a filent disquiet; out of which he very kindly refolved to deliver her, when he had made a proper trial of her tenderness. But his lady's jealoufy took another turn; for though she at first gently admonished him, vet finding that had no effect, fhe grew quickly a downright fury; and his house, from being the feat of the loves and graces, became a scene of discord and confusion; she treated him with continual reproaches, threatened the ladies the suspected, and himself with vengeance; burnt her laces, destroyed the furniture, and made it impossible for him to fuffer a friend to enter his house. Poor le Brun was at his wits end, for at the bottom he loved her the better for all this flame and violence; and at laft, by the help of assurances, protestations, promises, submissions, and attonements, a treaty of peace was concluded, and things were once more fet right; the husband being fully convinced of his false politicks, and the lady reduced to her usual frame of mind.

Immediately after this reconciliation, our whimfical couple were as fond as when they were first married; le Brun hardly appeared any where in company; his wife was as seldom seen, and both were in a manner persuaded they were made for each other; that the world was not worthy of their notice, much less deserved to be made acquainted with their happiness. But

this fecond fleep did not last near so long as the After they were espoused, the lady defired only her husband's affection in return for her own; she now expected obedience likewise. There had been a dispute, she had prevailed, and as is natural in fmall quarrels as well as great, the vanguished must suffer. Colonel le Brun bore this at first with a good grace, and gratified his wife's whims in their full extent, as fast as they rose, and as often as they changed. Sometimes jewels and fine cloaths, fometimes paintings, cabinets and tapestry hangings; sometimes great dinners and numerous affemblies, and magnificent balls in town; fometimes exotic plants, extensive gardens and magnificent pavilions in the country; sometimes coaches, horses, servants and travelling equipage, were her supreme joy. Through all these roads he paffed, though with some unneasiness and fatigue.

At length she touched the string that totally discomposed their harmony; she was grown giddy with this fcene of submission, and thought The might trample on a tenderness that had in fo many inflances converted a mafter into a flave. In fhort, she turned coquette, though the had nothing bad in her inclinations; and if le Brun could have borne it, and borne it with indifference, it might have produced a revolution in his favour; but he grew thoughtful and melancholy, and at last so angry, that he locked up his wife; upon this she relapsed into fury and resentment. Her relations proposed a separation, le Brun came into it readily, and having fettled upon her two thousand crowns a year, retired into Switzerland, having contracted in his own mind a fettled aversion to the sex, which he covered with an exterior behaviour, that was persectly civil and polite. His lady however was the victim of her own conduct, for though at first she triumphed in her independence, yet she soon grew sick of it, sunk under the dominion of her relations, and finding this far less gentle than that which she had thrown off, she sell into a chagrin, which in the space of two

vears wore out her life.

e-

or e.

nd

t,

n i-

> As le Brun was now entirely his own mafter. he fet up for a kind of philosopher, lived hospitably, kept a great number of fervants, treated every body about him with gentleness and generosity, and attracted by this means universal esteem. He thought himself wise, and was really thought so by others, not without a great colour of reafon, fince he had abandoned most of his follies, only the reigning love of vanity still prevailed; and what he took for a spirit of benevolence, was at the bottom but a passion for applause. He purchased a considerable estate, improved an old house that was upon it, into a convenient as well as handsome dwelling; laid out fine gardens, and had a great refort of company; all this without prejudice to his fortune; for he either inherited or acquired a talent of occonomy, that kept him from leffening, though he had no defire to increase his riches.

> He was at this time turned of forty; but as he was naturally very temperate, and took a great deal of care of his health; his perfon was very agreeable, and he had still the air of a young man. His acquaintance lay also chiefly amongst those who were less advanced in years than himself; amongst whom he had the art of

paffing

paffing for a man of great knowledge and experience, and was continually reading to them a kind of lectures on the science of living in the world, of which, as of all other sciences, he had but a very superficial tincture. Yet as his notions, tho' not deep, could not be called bad, fo wifer persons than he would frequently commend them, which contributed not a little to the general respect paid him, in which he placed his fupreme felicity; and when he was furrounded by a crowd of his pupils, all liftening attentively to his dictates, he looked upon himself as a first rate fage, who had raifed a kind of new empire by a dint of a superior understanding. This satisfaction, which troubled nobody, but on the contrary, by keeping him in humour with himfelf, was the fource of a beneficence equally laudable and extensive, he might have enjoyed for many years, if an accident, arifing entirely from his generofity, and which it was impossible for him, or even for a person of much greater capacity to have foreseen, had not cut short the thread of his days, long before the time that feemed to be allotted for him by nature.

Amongst the number of le Brun's pupils, there was one who was distinguished as a kind of favourite; he was called Florio, and was really a young gentleman of great merit. His father was a person of distinction and of great probity, after which it will not appear strange to add, that he had a very small estate. There lived near him an Italian nobleman, whom the horrors of war had driven out of the Dutchy of Milan, a man of high birth, well allied, and who had brought with him into Switzerland a considerable fortune. He had an only daughter, whose name

d

was Roxana, about the age of seventeen, a majestick beauty, who took pleasure in the number of her admirers, and who, like many of her countrywomen, was of an amorous disposition, and possessed in a supreme degree a spirit of subtilty and intrigue. With this fair one Florio was desperately in love, he could not, indeed he did not intend to conceal it from le Brun, who at his request made several great entertainments for the Italian Count and his lovely daughter, towards whom he behaved upon fuch occasions as became him, with all the deference and politeness possible. Florio did not leave the lady ignorant of the motives to these spectacles, which however the fancied that the understood much better than he. To see and not to feel the effects of her charms was a thing she could not comprehend; befides, the behaviour of colonel le Brun fortified her in her mistake; the reputation he had acquired of being a man of great abilities, would not fuffer her to doubt, that under pretence of gratifying Florio's passion, he in reality made it barely subservient to his own. Thus the vanity of le Brun missed that of Roxana into a train of mifreprefentations, from which it was impossible for her to be undeceived.

The credit which Florio's father had in the government was of fo great use to the Italian count, that the proposal of a match between their children was disagreeable to him only in the circumstance of fortune. He took occasion to mention this to colonel le Brun, who answered him by a warm and candid discourse of the young man's merit, and of the little need there was of immense riches to make people happy in a country where the conveniences of

life

life were easily acquired, and where frugality was not at all dishonourable. This made no great impression upon the count, and le Brun faw with infinite concern that his favourite was like to lose his miffres for want of a fortune. To prevent this he took a resolution as fingular as it was generous, he made a present to Florio of the house and estate which he had purchased, and which with the improvements he had made flood him in more than forty thousand crowns. All the world applauded fo noble an action, the marriage was celebrated at the colonel's castle, of which a few days after he left the young couple in full possession, removing to another house of his that he had just bought, and where he proposed to amuse himself with rendering it fit for his reception and that of his friends, which however was a defign that he did not live to accomplish.

Florio was now the happiest man in the world, and Roxana, if she had been a better woman, might have been as happy too. But this act of the colonel's generofity did not appear to her in the fame light that it did to others. Instead of being a mark of the fincerity of his friendship for her husband, she regarded it as an acquisition made by her beauty, and in this light it made an impression, but a very bad one, upon her mind. The colonel visited them sometimes, and as he was received with honest gratitude by Florio, so he met with a disloyal kindness from his wife. His own coldness hindered him from perceiving it at first, but by degrees it became visible. He took an opportunity one evening in the garden to lead her into an obscure arbour, and when she expected a declaration of love, he faid with

freedom,

with a firm, tho' not a loud voice, "Roxana, "my friendship has procured you a good huse band, if for this you think yourself obliged to me, make him a good wife." He had no sooner said this, than he quitted the place im-

mediately and rejoined the company.

0

r

The lady remained fome space where she was to recover her temper, which when she had effected she likewise returned, and spent some hours with them as easy and as chearfully as if the had not taken the least offence. But whe? ther le Brun had by this time really acquired some infight into human nature, whether he contracted an aversion to her from her behaviour, or whether he had some secret presage in his mind of his misfortune, he from that time forbore his visits; and that this might be the less discernible; he hardly ever went to any other gentleman's house. But Florio went often to his, and would fometimes spend the whole day there, notwithstanding le Brun's remonstrances, that having now a wife he should not be so often or so long from home; which was a doctrine Florio readily adhered to in every other case, but here he thought that friendship and gratitude might at least excuse, if not justify a different conduct.

On the anniversary of their wedding, Florio and Roxana invited their family and acquaintance, and the latter artfully engaged her husband's father to bring le Brun. The colonel at first excused himself as going little abroad, but resecting that the world might possibly think he repented of what he had done for his friend, he immediately ordered his coach. The day was spent with all the elegant magnificence, which such a solemnity required; the evening in mirth and

66

freedom, when le Brun retiring to a Venetian window, Roxana followed him and whispered fostly in his ear, "I have not forgot your grave "advice." He turned about hastily, and saw that she was talking to her husband, with which he was very well pleased, and began to statter himself all things would go well. The supper and ball being over, he found it too late to return home, and therefore made no scruple of accepting an apartment in a house that had been once his, and taking leave of the company between twelve and one, his own servant attended him to bed.

He waken'd about day break with violent gripings in the stomach. He called his servant who lay near him, but without receiving any answer; he grew worse, and was apprehensive that he should have died alone, when his man entered the room, who no fooner looked upon his master's face, but he cried out with grief and aftonishment, " alas, Sir, are you in the " fame condition!" Le Brun had just strength enough to ask him what he meant, and was informed that Florio was at the point of death, and that the physician, who had been fent for, thought he was poisoned. " He is then likely " to know my difeafe," faid le Brun faintly. The fervant called for affiftance, and the colonel being somewhat relieved by proper medicines, removed to his own house, where he languished about fix weeks. Florio's youth and excellent conflitution faved him.

He was with his friend in his last moments, who gave him a great deal of found advice.
I never knew the world, said he, till now that
I am a going out of it. Let my example

ian

red

ave

aw

ich

ter

e-

of-

'n

.

d

" be a warning to you, be affured that in this " life there is nothing that can make a man " happy. That must depend upon the frame " of his own mind, and his placing his hopes " upon the next. Be a good husband to your " wife." " That the may have an opportunity " of poisoning me again," faid Florio. " I did " not know, returned le Brun, that you were " convinced of that; yes, faid he, and that she " has brought you into this condition." " I for-" give her, added the colonel, and defire you " would do fo too; as to any precautions you " may think necessary for your fafety, I am no " judge of them. Adieu! I willingly did you " all the good I could, and was innocently the " cause of your misfortune and my own. Adieu "Florio, once more, adieu." He left by his will several handsome legacies to his friends, and the bulk of his estate to charitable uses. Roxana, her father and her husband joined in advising her to retire to a convent, where it is to be hoped the learned another spirit than that of vengeance, and died better than she lived.

Where I had this story all is referred to deftiny, and it is very judiciously observed, that from his youth to his grave, the fair sex were ever satal to le Brun. But ought we not rather to say his own folly and imprudence made them so? and what is there in nature so good as not to be perverted? I am not ignorant of the conjectures that have been framed from my own behaviour, but I know that I am innocent. A man who has an aversion for the sex is a sool and a monster; a man who loves the sex indifcriminately, or in other words, a man of modern gallantry, is a coxcomb. There is a de-

cency,

cency, a civility, a complacency due to the ladies; but when this is exceeded without any meaning, it is frequently attended with confequences fatal, tho' unforeseen. These are sincerely my sentiments upon a very delicate subject. I have thought of it very often, and very seriously, being persuaded, that women are born to make men

happy or miserable.

But these, and indeed most other errors spring, from the wrong turn of modern education, in which, if I mistake not much, we lay too great a stress on trisles, and hardly think at all, of things that are very effential. It might be right to banish logick from the schools, but fure a young man ought to be taught to use his reason, and to diffinguish between the importance of great qualities, and the accidental advantages that fpring from what are fliled genteel accomplishments. The former are by all means to be obtained, tho' the latter ought not to be neglected. But to fancy that what young people are now commonly taught will carry them through the world, either without or with a fortune, is not either confistent with reason, or confirmed by experience, and therefore those who fail are to be pitied, and those who succeed are to be admired; fince more is to be ascribed to their parts than to the diligence of their masters, who frequently teach them what must be dangerous, if not under the direction of good fense, and never attempt to teach them that, indeed are feldom able to teach it them. My verse will perhaps explain this better, or at least more agreeably than my profe.

H

1.

High rais'd in air, and floating on the wind,
The schoolboy's kite with steady motion slies;
Safe in a length of train that slows behind,
To aid its passage through the yielding skies,
And falls like Phaeton, if that unties.
Hence be this maxim grav'd upon the heart,
(Since trivial sights, may noble thoughts impart)
Ev'n childish sports, require a kind of art.

n

II.

To delve the ground, the springing hedge to raise,
To guide the plow, to thrash the yellow grain;
To rule the herds that o'er the commons graze,
Whatever strength requires or leads to gain,
Tho' done by sordid clown or homely swain,
Some prudence shews, in those who it sulfill,
A mind directing, an obedient will,
For ev'ry calling, needs a sort of skill.

III.

Past childish plays, and free from vulgar cares,
Shall we then trust the bark of life to chance,
Or aids it much in mankind's great affairs,
To ride, or fence, to sing, or play or dance,
To speak the tongues of Italy or France?
Now blown with hope, and now o'erset with
fear,
Floating each tide, with ev'ry wind to veer;
He shipwreck seeks, who learns not how to
steer.

I find, faid Sir Lawrence, that appearances are very deceitful in this world, I always knew that Courtly had wit and breeding, but I never took him for a philosopher before. There are many ways, Sir, added Mr. Penfive, of coming at what you call philosophy or useful knowledge, some collect it from books, and others from the world; the former ferves best for shew, but the latter is easiest reduced to practice. In that you are certainly right, returned Courtly, but as a trader is like to make a better fortune who begins the world with a competent flock, than he who with equal parts fets out with never a shilling; fo a young man, who is well inftructed and accustomed to act upon right principles, will make a much better figure, and fall into fewer difficulties, than he who picks up his notions by degrees, and attains good qualities by having felt the ill effects of vicious habits. What fay you to this doctrine, Mr. Beaumont, for I know that these points have been long the objects of your study? I fay, replied Beaumont, that the modern distinction between taste and knowledge is ill founded, fince the former is always the confequence of the latter; I know, and am fensible, that it is a good thing to be polite, but I am convinced that it is a better to be honest; and tho', as you rightly observed, good breeding is a thing not to be neglected, yet without good fense it is hardly to be attained, and with it it comes of course; for in all my acquaintance with the world, I hardly ever knew a blockhead that was well bred, or a coxcomb that ever came to much with all his breeding; your story of le Brun is very good, but your reflections upon it are excellent. Yet after all we are not the proper judges,

judges, let us appeal to a higher tribunal, what

fay the ladies?

ire

nat

ok

ny

at

e,

10

he

u

a

e

We are more obliged, faid lady Constantia, to captain Courtly for his remarks than for his performance; he found it a fatire upon our fex, and he has made it a panegyrick. Say rather, Madam, added Mrs. Anguish, that like a courteous Knight he has rescued us from the injuries offered to us by those who are commonly the authors of our faults and follies. Most men speak of the fex as they have been used by particular women, and as he has judiciously observed, when closely examined, the usage they meet with fprings from themselves, and they insuse by their own behaviour the very foibles that they cenfure. For my part, faid Calista, I have not yet seen enough to form a right judgment of many things that I have heard; and as for me, added, Miss Charlotte, all I can collect of the French lady is, that she was a giddy fool, and his lovely Italian a wicked woman, characters it behoves us to shun, and therefore I am very well pleased that they have been brought to our view. Shipwrecks make fine pictures, and I believe to contemplate them steadily, would be a fit remedy for a roving inclination. Very prettily faid, young lady, answered Beaumont, and I do not at all doubt that the same spirit will appear in to morrow night's entertainment, for which that you may be the better disposed, let us not keep you from your rest.

es, let us general to a bigher tribunal, what

from core he to be a H T we do not for, and he has made in a pane of low our rainer, he daine,

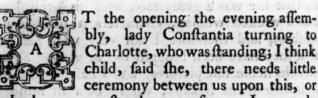
GENEROUS LOVERS;

O R,

The Adventures of

FREDERICK and EUGENIA.

A FLEMISH HISTORY.



indeed upon most other occasions. I am only forry that having been hitherto so well diverted, you come with a disadvantage of having expectation so highly raised, that what might otherwise produce approbation, may now with difficulty procure pardon. I do not speak to discourage you, Calista has performed like a heroine, perhaps you have been likewise a hard student, and this task not so difficult as I apprehended. Whatever the issue may be, we are prepared to hear you, and if to have candid, and

The Adventures of Frederick, &c. 145

even favourable judges can give spirit to a first

effay, I believe you need not despair.

I am very sensible, Madam, said Charlotte, paying her respects first to her mother, and then to the company, of the truth of your observation, which is a much better apology for me than I could have made for myself. The relation that I have chosen is not illustrious in its circumstances, or heightened by surprizing events, it is simple and natural, or at least so it appears to me, and contains nothing beyond what we see almost every day happen in private life; what chiefly determined me to think that it might not displease you, or the rest of my friends present, is that it seems to illustrate this maxim

Virtue, once rooted, will through life appear.

In the famous city of Antwerp, there lived an ancient maiden lady whose name was Melufina, very nobly descended, and allied to many of the best families in the Low Countries. She had the reputation of being truly pious, as well as feverely virtuous, and which was infinitely better, this reputation was built upon the folid basis of truth. She kept always in her family some young ladies, her relations, educated by her care, and improved by her example; and in the declining part of her life she had five, all of illustrious families, and amongst these the youngest was the daughter of the Baron de Braquemont, whose excellent qualities rendered her the peculiar favourite of the good old lady. The name of this lovely person was Eugenia, her age about fourteen, her person tall and majestic, her countenance inexpressibly pleasing, and her behaviour Vol. I. fo

fo affable and fo obliging, that she was as much the darling of the whole family as the delight of

Melufina.

The next door neighbour was a Dutch merchant whose name was Speelman, he had married without the confent of her family the fifter of a man of quality, a diffant relation to Melufina, who entertained a ftrict friendship with the lady fo long as she lived, and for her sake entrusted her husband with the principal management of her affairs. He was a person of great abilities, and of a most engaging converfation, but what chiefly diffinguished him was, that candour and frankness which appeared in all his dealings, and which had raifed fo general an opinion of his probity, that notwithstanding the perfecution excited against him by his wife's family, and which did not ceafe with her death, his credit was perfectly entire, tho' his fortune was far from being confiderable. He lived with great frugality, every thing about him was plain and neat, and a spacious garden, which was the principal amusement of his leisure hours, was the fingle inftance of his having a tafte for magnificence.

This indeed was a kind of little paradife, for the feveral quarters of it were laid out in different manners, and in each quarter there was a little cabinet or pavilion in a different tafte, with furniture, books and pictures fuitable to the ftructure, one representing the cottage of a Flemish peafant, in which were all kind of landskips and country sports, with treatifes of husbandry and country affairs in all languages. In the parterre stood the temple of Flora, and on each of the twelve pannels were represented the product of

The Adventures of Frederick, &c. 147 the month in full flower. On one fide of the temple there was a kind of ifle, which was in fact the garden house, and the like on the other. in which were reposited the authors who had treated of this science. In that quarter which was best disposed for fruit appeared the temple of Pomona with every thing fuitable, and in the last, which was intended for exoticks, a temple twice as large as either of the others, which appeared to be confecrated to Vesta, but was in truth a green house. As one fide of this quarter was bounded by the wall of Melufina's garden, there was a door which gave free admiffion to that lady and her little family, whenever they thought fit to come and recreate themselves in this charming place, and on fuch occasions they were attended by Mr. Speelman, and his only fon Frederick, who was scarce fourteen, in the habit of gardiners, and who never failed to offer them the proper tributes of the feafon.

of

r-

r-

er

e-

th

ce

1-

of

r-

1

n

e

1-

1,

e

8

r

t

This kind of diversion, sweet and innocent as it feemed, proved in the end fatal to the peace of both families. Frederick from the first moment that he faw Eugenia, devoted himself in a The fairest and peculiar manner to her fervice. the sweetest flowers were chosen for her nosegays, the richest fruits were presented to her in baskets of his own making, and his affiduity to please her was such, that whenever she visited the garden, he had always fome new and unexpected prefent that claimed her acceptance; and if, as it fometimes happened, Melufina, to whom they were always carried, bestowed them upon any other of the ladies, Frederick could not help hewing a kind of reluctance. His father was the first who perceived that the boy was really

H 2

deeply

deeply in love before he knew what love was, and foreseeing the consequences of an ill placed passion, very prudently contrived to send him as often as he could out of the way; of which Melusina taking notice, and not suspecting the cause, enquired after him, and to Frederick's great sa-

tisfaction commanded his attendance.

In this manner about two years wore away, a space more than sufficient to root that inclipation, which arose at first fight so strongly in the breast of Frederick, that it quite altered his disposition; from being brisk, active, and inquifitive, he grew uneasy, studious and pensive; and the garden, which had been formerly his amusement, became almost the sole object of his thoughts, and took up the greatest part of his time. His father faw it with great concern, and was for some time at a loss how to proceed. He was unwilling to treat him roughly, or to explain to him how well he knew the cause, from an apprehension that this might imprint it the more frongly in his mind; but feeing plainly that this would counter-act all his schemes, and render the youth utterly unfit for business, he sent for him into his closet, and in the tenderest manner possible laid before him the folly of his conduct, and the inconveniences that must inevitably attend it.

Poor Frederick confessed with blushes and tears that the charge was well founded, but pleaded that his fault was involuntary, and he believed unknown to all, but his father; that he had never presumed to say any thing to Eugenia that might give her even the most distant suspicion of his stame, and that notwithstanding he had fallen into this misfortune his obedience was

entire,

The Adventures of Frederick, &c. 149

entire, and he was ready to facrifice every thing to his father's injunctions. The good man was so much moved by the honesty and frankness of the confession, that he could not help embracing him tenderly, and then told him, that as his circumstances were by no means such as would enable him to form pretensions to a lady of her birth and fortune, he proposed to him a voyage to the Indies, where he had a brother in a very high post, by whose favour, joined to his own industry, he might in a few years become rich; and return home in a condition that might perhaps enable him to pursue his inclinations with success.

9

His father in the latter part of his discourse meant very probably no more than to footh the young man's thoughts, till distance, and a variety of new scenes, should cure him of a distemper, that yields to no other remedy. Frederick heard him with attention, promifed to conform in all things to what he expected, and of his own accord confented to retire out of the garden, whenever Melufina and her young wards came to visit it; in all which he was very sincere, and really believed that he could execute with the fame facility that he promifed. Experience however taught him the contrary, and tho' at first he had once or twice the courage to quit the house immediately under pretence of business of importance, yet at other times he acted his part so aukwardly, that he could not dissemble the joy he felt, when Melusina gently over-ruled his father, and infifted that Frederick should be left to attend them.

But when the winter came on, and old Speelsman began to make preparations for accompa-H 3 nying

It was not a little fingular, that during the whole course of his illness, the young man never so much as mentioned the name of Eugenia, or in the most distant manner enquired of his father concerning Melusina or her family. But this was however very far from deceiving a person so well acquainted with the world as that old gentleman was, who therefore of his own accord told him, that Melusina sent constantly twice a day to enquire how he did, and that she would bring the young ladies to divert him with a little concert of musick in the temple of Flora, as soon as the season and the state of his health would permit. He quickly discerned that discourses

The Adventures of Frederick, &c. 151

courses of this kind operated more than physick, and that the thoughts of seeing Eugenia was the best restorative that he could administer; but he began to be apprehensive that even this would not do, if the young man's expectations were

kept too long upon the stretch.

After mature deliberation within himself, he took at length a resolution to communicate the whole affair to Melufina, without the least artifice or disguise. It happened that she sent for him upon business the same evening, and on her enquiring, as fhe always did very kindly after Frederick's health, he told her plainly, that his recovery must depend upon her goodness. She heard the whole story of the young man's folly with great attention and concern, and after commending Mr. Speelman's prudence and probity in a thing which touched him so nearly, she declared herself at a loss how to proceed in so deficate an affair. " All the favour, returned he, " Madam, that I ask is, that your ladyship " would bring Eugenia to vilit him in company " with the rest of the young ladies, since I am " perfuaded that this will enable the vigour of " his youth to get the better of the disease, and " you may then depend upon my taking all the " care possible to get the better of his passion, " which, as I am thoroughly convinced, has not " the least tincture of interest or ambition."

Melulina at first hesitated, but at length promised that she would come the next day alone to see the young man, and that in a day or two she would comply with his request entirely. At this visit, which was in some measure sounded in curiosity, she was so exceedingly moved at the right of Frederick, who was worn almost to a

H 4

skeleton,

fkeleton, and had scarce strength to rise out of his chair to receive her, that it was with some difficulty the conftrained herfelf fo far, as not to let him know how much he was the object of her compassion; and when she lest his room she told Mr. Speelman, that nothing ever touched her heart so much, as not to have it in her power to contribute to the happiness, as well as to the health of his fon, but that through their joint endeavours fhe did not despair that both might be accomplished. The next day she brought the young ladies and excused the absence of Eugenia upon some slight pretence, with a promise to bring her alone, the evening following, which had fuch a visible influence on Frederick's spirits, as fully convinced her, that his difease had no other cause than that which his father had asfigned.

Two or three visits a week for somewhat more than a month, not only rescued the young lover from danger, but from his confinement, fo that he was able to fpend an hour or two of the day in the warmest part of the garden; after which he mended apace, his spirits and vivacity returning gradually with his ftrength. One afternoon, having retired into the temple of Vesta, and amufing himself with Rapin's Poem on gardens, he was furprized to hear the door open, and much more fo when he faw Eugenia enter alone. " I am no stranger, Frederick, said the, to the miferies you have endured for my fake, and think it would be injustice to diffemble " the great concern they gave me; I am to leave Melufina's house to morrow, I am incertain when, or whether ever I shall see Antwerp again. It was intended that you fould The Adventures of Frederick, &c. 153

"fhould know nothing of my departure, but
"that was an act of cruelty, to which in my
"own mind I could never confent. It is enough
"that your hopes are very improbable, without
"driving you to abfolute despair. This brace"let, taking one from her arm, is the only token
"I can give you of my compassion. Keep it,
"look upon it, remember me, and know that
"while I live you'll never want one who has a
"fincere sense of your good or ill fortune. May
"providence be propitious to us both. Adieu!"
In receiving the bracelet on his knees he kissed
her hand and remained motionless, when she

of

ne

to

of

1e

b

er

15

ır

it

After he had recovered himself a little, and ruminated for some time on the situation he was in, he took a sudden resolution of leaving Antwerp, and of pushing his fortune in the army. There was but one relation on his mother's side who had ever taken notice of him, and he was a general officer in the Bavarian troops. To him therefore he determined secretly to repair without acquainting his father, partly from the sear of his disapproving his project, and partly from a filly resentment, that Eugenia's going

away had been concealed. He was so full of the execution of this design when he had once formed it, that having got every thing in readiness by

withdrew back into Melufina's garden.

the next night he proposed to set out for Munich early the morning following.

The diforder of his thoughts, however, when the time of his departure drew near, was so great, that he could not think of going to bed, but walked about his own chamber till the hour approached that he was to go to the inn. When he came to open his door, he found it locked on

H 5

the:

the outside, which amazed him. He tried to force it open, when on a fudden the key turned, and his father entered. " I did not think, Fre-" derick, faid the old gentleman, that you and I " should have ever met upon these terms. I did " not take this precaution to prevent your joures ney, but that I might have an opportunity of telling you that I approve it. I would have " fent you to the Indies as well to better your 66 own circumstances, as to have hindered your 66 knowing the bottom of mine; at the proper " feafon I shall make that voyage myself. A cause-" less persecution, and iniquitous law suits have " undone me; but what grieves me most is, that I fee you in the very same road that led " me to ruin: I will not command you as a fa-"ther, but advise you as a friend never to at-46 tempt any intercourse with Eugenia. It may 44 be fatal to her, it must be so to you, and if " love diftracts your thoughts, you will make " but a bad figure in that trade which you are " determined to take up, and in which I from " my heart wish you success. There are fifty " ducats for the expences of your journey, and " in that paper there is a bill upon a banker at Munich, which with this letter to your cou-" fin is all you must expect from me; let us embrace friendly, and when we meet again,

" may it be upon happier terms." The young man was fo overwhelmed with forrow that he could not speak a word; but if there be eloquence in tears, his was very copious. His father followed him to the door, and with his eyes, which were not dry, to the further end of the street. When he came to the inn, Frederick found the coach just fetting out. He took

The Adventures of Frederick, &c. took all the pains he could to conceal his melancholy from his fellow travellers, but with very little effect. There was amongst these an ecclefiaftick, who was likewise going to Munich, who took pity of his youth and inexperience, affifted him with his advice, procured him post horses after the second day's journey, and on his arrival at Munich, conducted him to the house of his coufin who made a great figure there, and was in high favour with the elector. This nobleman received him kindly, offered him his affiftance, and proposed to him making the campaign as a volunteer, promising at the same time to defray the expence; fo that he had no occafion to break in upon his little fund, which taken all together amounted to five hundred ducats; and having written to his father the true state of his affairs, he fet out with his patron and kinfman for Hungary, where he behaved gallantly under the command of the electoral prince against the Turks, and towards the close of the year was appointed commissary to the dragoons, that served as auxiliaries in the imperial army.

to

d,

e-

Ī

id

e

ır

r

The nature of his post obliged him to return to Munich, in order to sollicit some affairs of consequence, for the corps to which he belonged, and there he received a letter from a friend acquainting him that his father was embarked for the Indies, that his house and garden were let for the benefit of his creditors, and that he would have made the voyage in very uneasy circumstances, if the lady who was his next door neighbour had not made him a present of a thousand ducats, as an acknowledgment for his fidelity in the conduct of her affairs. He was surprized to find no letter from his father, but upon examin-

ing

ing that, which he had received more ftrictly, he plainly perceived it was his hand, and that he had only made use of the name of a friend to avoid writing things, which must be equally painful to himself and disagreeable to his son. He now faw himself in the world under the neceffity of shifting as well as he could with a slender appointment, and with a very small resource in case of any unexpected accident; which untoward fituation, with his fense of his father's milfortunes, and the duties of his post, qualified in a great measure the fervour of his passion, tho' he could not help fometimes regretting the loss of Eugenia, and the want of having any certain method of obtaining the least intelligence of her.

His patron, who had his interest very much at heart, procured him a commission of some importance that was to be executed at Cologne, to which city he went in the retinue of a young prince, to whom he was also recommended. He fpent his time very agreeably in that city, in company much superior to any he had formerly kept; his affiduity and fidelity having acquired him in some measure the favour of the great person whom he attended, and who admitted him constantly to his table. But this funshine of fortune did not long continue, that young prince had a little wildness in his-temper, and from that complaifance, which is usually fatal to young men, Frederick fell in with it, and was his confident in an amour which was attended. with an unlucky adventure. The object of the prince's passion was a young lady of a great family, and in returning from an affignation, to which he went accompanied only by Frederick and a Swifs fervant, they were attacked in the ffreet, but.

but defended their lives very gallantly; the prince and the Swiss extricated themselves tolerably well; but Frederick receiving a wound in the thigh, sell; and was soon after taken up by the horse-guard, which the noise of the dispute had brought to the place where it happened, and

in this condition he was fent to prison.

0

6

He received the next day a small present in money from the prince, who was obliged to fet out for Munich, with a request to conceal at all events his having any concern in the fray, and an affurance that he would remember and reguite his fidelity. Promifes are not always among the number of unquestionable securities; Frederick's wound was dangerous, and at the fame time he was exposed to a profecution, supported by a potent influence, and carried on with inflexible feverity. As it was impossible to remove him, he was examined in his chamber. when nothing more could be extorted from him. than that he was attacked as he was returning to his lodgings; he knew not by whom, and had received his wound in his own defence. He was informed, that a person of great distinction was also wounded, and, as it was believed, by him, in case of whose death he had no mercy to expect; at least, if he continued in this disposition and refused to tell in what company he. was, and whence he came.

His money was foon exhausted, he knew not whom to apply to, and it was with great difficulty that he prevailed upon his keeper to send a letter, which he gave him open, to Munich, with a bill in it for one hundred ducats. It was several weeks before he was able to stand, and in that space, all the news he received, was

a letter from his banker, giving him credit at Cologn for his money, and an account that his post was disposed of, and that they had a very indifferent opinion of him at court, where various rumours prevailed as to the cause of his misfortune; all of which however were fufficiently detrimental to his reputation. The profecution went on, though the person wounded was perfectly recovered, and our unfortunate adventurer was threatened with a sentence of perpetual imprisonment in a castle upon the Rhine; and to heighten his forrows, his purse began again to grow very light. However, his constancy was not at all shaken; he persisted in what he at first declared, adding, that though death would be more welcome to him than imprisonment, yet neither that nor any other punishment should force him to go any farther, much less tempt him to accuse the innocent, to procure favour for himself.

While things were in this difinal fituation, an ecclesiastic made him a visit of charity. He told him, that as he was a young man and a ftranger, he pitied his condition, and that he would be glad to contribute, if it was in his power, to his relief. Frederick at first suspected that he meant to draw from him by fair means his fecret, and therefore answered him very cautiously. In a little time the good man convinced him, he had nothing of that kind to fear. He told him, that in a few days he would certainly receive his fentence, but that gaolers were not always impracticable, and that possibly gold might open a paffage, even through iron grates. Frederick upon this told him the true flate of his affairs, in regard to money, and represented to him, that

is

a-

is

.

)-

d

that if his whole fortune could procure his liberty, it was impossible for him to command it in that time. His friend replied, that he had not a moment to lofe, and that he had best try what his keeper would accept. Frederick endeavoured to found him that evening; and after a conference, which lasted best part of the night, he was given to understand, that for three hundred ducats in ready money, means might be found to fet him at large. The ecclefiaftic came the next morning, and to him in great confusion he related what had passed, lamenting that he had no person at Cologne, to whom he could apply with any shadow of hope to advance him that fum. His friend bid him not despair, that he would himself give him a hundred ducats, and at the same time drew a note out of his pocket, containing the name and refidence of one, to whom the keeper might apply, and perhaps obtain fatisfaction; and having faid this he took his leave.

Frederick knew not what to think of this affair, only the present of a hundred ducats looked like fincerity, and he thought he could not well be in a worse state than he was, which determined him to do as he was directed. The goaler took the note, and left him without a word of answer. He saw nothing of him best part of the day, which made him very uneafy, and the more so, as he knew not the name of the ecclefiaftic, nor had ever fo much as heard of the person mentioned in the note. Towards evening the goaler came to him, with as pleafant a countenance as fuch a fellow could put on, and bid him be ready at midnight; at which time an old woman conducted him out of prison, and carried

carried him to a place, where a man waited for him, who put him on board a vessel that was going down the Rhine; and who at taking leave of him, advised him to make the best of his way to Augsburgh, giving him at the same

time proper instructions for that purpose.

It may be eafily believed, that he purfued those directions carefully, and used all the diligence imaginable to get to a place where he thought he might be fafe, and when he arrived there, he had leifure to recollect himself. At first, the whole transaction appeared so mysterious, that he knew not what to make of it; but at last he concluded, that the prince, who had been the cause of his misfortune, had been also the author of his deliverance; and this appeared to have fuch an air of probability, that by degrees he looked upon it as certain. He dispatched a perfon from thence with a letter to his patron at Munich, and another to his banker, not doubting that the answers to them would effectually clear up the thing, and point out to him the path which he was to purfue for the future.

While he waited for the return of this meffenger, there arrived in the same inn Count d'Arco, who was the favourite of the electoral prince of Bavaria, with several other persons of distinction. Mr. Speelman, who had been well known to him in the army, was at a loss how to behave; but his impatience to know what was to become of him, soon got the better of his usual modesty and all other considerations. He threw himself therefore in the Count's way, as he was retiring from dinner to his own apartment: that nobleman immediately knew him, took him into his closet, and demanded a strict.

account of his adventure, which he gave him with fuch a modest sincerity, that he promised to remove any ill impression that might still remain upon his cousin's mind; told him, that such as were about the young prince's person, envied his favour, and had represented him in a bad light to the elector; that the young prince was gone to make the tour of Italy, but had commended his affair to his electoral highness, who had mentioned it to his cousin, and told him, that he thought young Speelman very ill treated: at the close of this conference, he in-

vited him to supper in the evening.

Frederick full of joy, appeared at supper time, when the count received him with great kindness; presented him to all who did not know him before, with this compliment; that if fidelity and courage could recommend a man, he was worthy of their acquaintance. The wine went very brifkly round at supper, and as soon as it was over, the company fell to play. Frederick who was a little elevated, hazarded all his small stock at basset, and by three in the morning, when the company broke up, found himself master of five thousand ducats, which extraordinary run of good fortune almost deprived him of his fenses. He took leave of the count next day, who promifed not to forget him, and advised him to remain where he was, till he heard from him, which was not at all unacceptable to Frederick, who in his present circumstances, was defirous of having a little leifure to recollect himself, and to enjoy in his own manner that liberty, to which he was fo lately reftored. 1500 of model or mining odi to hart alle drive offermed barbanan sile and Upon

Upon the return of his messenger from Munich, he received two hundred ducats upon the bills he had drawn, not at all foreseeing that he should meet with fuch an unexpected supply, but no other news, except that his coufin was gone to Venice, to execute a commission of great confequence; that his escape made some noise, and that the banker thought it was not prudent for him to return to that city, till he was fure of protection. He was extremely pleafed, with the good fense and diligence of the person he had employed, and enquired of the mafter of the house, who was a person of substance and character, what his circumstances were, and whether he would be willing to enter into his fervice. The inn-keeper told him his name was Lopez, that he was a native of Bifcay, and that he came in the train of a Spanish minister to Vienna, after whose death, he had served several German noblemen, was at that time out of place, and would be certainly glad of fo good a master; Frederick was very well pleased with this account, and having agreed with Lopez, directed him to provide an apartment for him in a private house, during the time he should remain at Augsburgh; so that in the space of a very few days, he found himself perfectly well accommodated in the house of an eminent jeweller, with whom he agreed for the board of himfelf and his fervant.

His first care was to discharge his obligations at Cologne, in order to which, it became absolutely necessary to acquaint Lopez with the circumstances of his escape, and with the name of the person, to whom the goaler was recommended. He furnished him also with bills for a

thousand

th

re

h

h

thousand ducats, and ordered him, in case any prosecution had been carried on against the goaler, to make him such an amends, as the person, to whom he was recommended, should think reasonable. After his departure, he remitted twelve hundred ducats to his banker at Munich, having learned by experience, how necessary it was to have some certain resource, whether great or little, and that as much as possible out of the reach of sortune. These points of importance dispatched, he thought himself at liberty to pursue his inclinations, to divert himself in company, and to make his residence in

Augsburgh as agreeable as might be.

h.

ills

he

ut

ne

at

e,

m

of

re

d

e

.

The negotiation in which Lopez was employed, took up more time than his mafter expected; but as he acquainted him with the reaon of it by letter, he was perfectly easy. Upon his return, Frederick was informed, that the goaler had been in no small jeopardy through his own imprudence, having made fuch a hole in the wall of the prison, to give a colour to his escape, as rendered it wholly improbable; but that a few days after, from motives that remained a fecret to the public, he was fet at liberty, and all the proceedings in the original cause were declared null and void; the whole expence, together with that of the journey, came within five hundred ducats; and at the same time that Lopez delivered back bills for the like fum, he gave his mafter a letter from the merchant at Cologne, by which he kindly congratulated him on the fituation of his affairs; informed him, that his friendship with his father was of many years standing, and that the bearer had acquitted himself of his commission with prudence

164 The Generous Lovers; or,

for many months after this at Augsburgh, where he amused himself as well as he could, without learning any material news from either of his patrons, which at last began to give him no small uneasiness.

At the feafon of the year, when the home. ward-bound India ships usually arrive in Holland, Frederick dispatched his trusty fervant to Antwerp, in order to learn, if possible, some news of his father; and it was during his absence, that the young spark fell into a new misfortune. fo much the more grievous, as it was entirely owing to his own indiferetion. He was not mafter of his temper when he had drank freely, and though he did this but feldom, yet when he was in company he liked, he was but too apt to do as other people did. A French stranger, with whom he had contracted an acquaintance, invited him to an entertainment, that he was to give upon his departure, and after supper, when he was no longer upon his guard, they fell to play, in which Frederick being at first successful, ventured his all, loft it, and contracted a debt to his new friend, of three hundred florins, which he discharged the next morning, by borrowing that fum of his landlord, upon bills that he gave him on his banker at Munich. accident, as it threatened his total ruin, affected him extremely, and much more fo, when he was informed, that his bills were protested, his banker being dead, and his affairs left in great diforder. All these unlucky circumstances happening together, made fuch an impression on his mind, that he fell ill, fo that Lopez found him

panaburo

m

bu

tu

b

n

h

oh

at his return confined to his chamber, and in a

very melancholy condition.

ut

13

I

١,

73

d

3

0

•

1

The news he brought was none of the most comfortable; all that was known of old Speelman at Antwerp, amounting to no more, than that he arrived fafely at the Cape of Good-Hope, but so late, that he had loft his passage for that year. As Frederick had no other person to whom he could speak, he was obliged, though unwillingly, to acquaint Lopez with the unfortunate state of his affairs, to whom, he was furprised to find they were no secret, his landlord having informed him of them within three hours after his arrival, but with some additional circumstances, which Lopez very fairly reported. In short, the jeweller informed him, that though he had great occasion for his money, he was very unwilling to press his master; but if he was fo inclined, he could put him into an eafy method, not only of extricating himself from his present difficulties, but of fixing his future There lived happiness upon a folid foundation. over-against them a filversmith's widow, young, handsome and rich, who had confided to the jeweller's wife, as a great fecret, that the was desperately in love with their lodger; so that it depended entirely upon himself, whether he would remain fingle and miserable, or make himself happy at once, by marrying a fine woman with a fair fortune.

After meditating a while, with downcast eyes, Frederick at length lifted them to heaven big with "tears. How unhappy, cried he, is the lot of a "young man, whom chance or necessity leaves too early in his own power! yet if my folly had been fatal only to myself, I could have

" borne

" borne it with more patience. In the first in-" stance, it was at least an additional, if not " the immediate cause of my father's going, when passed the middle of his days, to seek if his bread in the remotest parts of the world, It has thrown me already into a goal, " and brought me within fight of a violent death. I have a prospect at present, no less " hideous before my eyes, and with the loss of every other hope, must lose that too of Euer genia. Alas, what would I not have hazarded to have become worthy of her! but now it is impossible, and yet I will never add in-" fidelity to imprudence, but rather perish in-" nocent and young, than by committing new " acts of injustice, drag on the load of life " with regret. Be filent Lopez, pity and keep " fecret the forrows of your unhappy mafter, " whose kindness for you is great, though his " power be little." The faithful Spaniard sympathized with his

mafter in his affliction, and when he had given vent to his passion, and was of course in a fitter condition to hear reason; he told him, "that " fince he was not pleased with the proposition of "his landlord, he would, with his permission, " offer another of his own." Frederick bid him "The mafter of the inn, continued fpeak on. Lopez, who recommended me to your service, " has known me many years; he is rich, has a very " good correspondence at Munich, and it may 66 be will advance a fum of money upon the cre-

"dit of what is in your banker's hands." What, though he is dead in bad circumstances,

" replied Frederick?" " It is but trying, return-" ed Lopez, he will not suspect me of any de-

ce fign

le

"

"

h

h

2

d

h

i

1

The Adventures of Frederick, &c. 167
"fign to deceive or defraud him." His mafter
left him at liberty to take his own measures, and
in three days time he procured him fix hundred
ducats; telling him at the same time, "that the
"disorder of the banker's affairs arose only
"from his dying suddenly, and that in a little
"time it was generally believed all things would
"be set to rights." This gave Frederick such
consolation, that he soon recovered, discharged
his debt to the jeweller, and would willingly
have quitted Augsburgh, if the situation of his
affairs had rendered it convenient; the account
he had received of the widow making him not

a little uneasy; more especially as Lopez con-

jectured, with no great improbability, that the

money which had been lent him, came in re-

n-

g,

d.

ı,

nt

of

1-

-

.

v

p

While he was deliberating with himself what to do, as being heartily weary of the inactive life which he led, he received a letter from Count d'Arco, that threw him into new perplexities. That nobleman informed him, that his coulin had recommended him to the electoral prince, in fuch strong terms, that he was inclined to appoint him major of the count's regiment of dragoons, then raising; but that as before he received this advice, he had in fome measure engaged himself to an old officer, the only method left to obtain it, was to pay him two thousand ducats, which he hoped was in his power, without applying to his cousin for affiftance, to whom he would have this affair remain an abfolute secret. Frederick was now at his wits end, he faw, that if he had not fquandered his money, he might have acquired at once an honourable establishment, which was now utterly.

terly out of his power, and himself under the cruel necessity of acquainting Count d'Arco, that he was not only in no condition to read any benefit from this offer, but that he was ruined by his own indifcretion, and confequently

1

1

2

unworthy of his friendship, at a rivb aid mont

The disconsolate condition of his master could not be long a fecret from Lopez, who comforted him as well as he could, and hinted to him, that he should write such an answer as might gain a little time. To what end, cried Frederick? Fatherless and friendless as I am. what fuccours have I to expect, or from whom? From heaven and your own fober thoughts, replied Lopez, with his Spanish gravity, which threw his mafter into a fresh surprise. At length, recovering himself a little, I have already, said he, experienced your zeal and fidelity, but I profess, that I cannot imagine what service you can render me in the present case, and to trifle with fo great a man is equally contrary to my duty and inclination. But you will not trifle Sir, faid Lopez, if we can get the money. The money, cried Frederick, do you confider the fum, two thousand ducats, how is it to be had, where, what shadow of security have I to offer? Your integrity, faid Lopez. Alas, friend, added Frederick, gravely, we must not amuse ourselves with dreams: I have been a fool, must confess it, and must submit to the punishment that it deserves. Lopez rising, and taking two or three Spanish strides cross the room; I fay, Sir, returned he, with a firm voice, that my mafter, Mr. Frederick Speelman, is a young gentleman of honour, that he will repay that fum to whoever lends it, and that upon this fecurity

curity I will obtain it; what have you to fay to that, Sir? That I am afraid it is rhodomontado, Lopez, returned Frederick; if you have any rational meaning don't keep me upon the rack, but explain it.

e

p

as ly

d

d

h

d

u

e

ľ

e

t

t

There dwells, Sir, continued Lopez, with his usual submission, a very honest gentleman at Cologne, who can accommodate you with that or a larger fum, and who knows that you are a man of integrity; write him a letter, trust me with count d'Arco's; alk him for two thoufand five hundred ducats, and direct him to remit two thousand to the count. Do it, Sir, I fay do it, and if Lopez fails, pin him to the ground at your feet. Thou art a true Spaniard, cried his master, and if thou dost succeed, I am more obliged to thy honesty than my own. However I will try, it is a hard task I have to write these letters, but yours is much harder; I will about mine immediately, and be you ready to fet out in the morning. ofcers-to icin bits

They were accordingly penned with great modefty and candour. In that to the count, after fuitable acknowledgments, he promifed to use his utmost endeavours to remit that sum in a short fpace; and for the first time made use of art, in suggesting the death of his banker at Munich, as one cause of delay. In that to the merchant at Cologne, he faid all that it was poffible for him to fay in plain and ftrong terms. adding at the close, that if he could have proposed any security, he would not have wrote him so impertinent a letter, and that in refusing his request, he would not lessen in the smallest degree, the high fense he had of his former obligation. With these letters Lopez departed with such alacrity, that any mafter but his would have con-VOL. I. ceived

ceived ftrong expectations of fuccess; yet Frederick had fo little hopes, that from the time of his fervant's fetting out, he was under fuch a visible disturbance of mind, that he refused to see any company, and usually dined in his own chamber, which was a great disappointment to the amorous widow, who for the fake of feeing him, was become almost a boarder in the fa-

mily.

In this manner he spent about three weeks, without receiving any letters, except from his cousin at Venice, who congratulated him upon the commission which he had procured, and which Frederick faw no probability of obtaining. At length, the day before Lopez returned, came a courier, express from count d'Arco, with the commission, and a very obliging letter, acknowledging the receipt of the money, and affuring him of his future favour and protection, with orders to join him at Aix la Chapelle in two months. He wrote a fuitable answer to this letter, and having made the courier a present of fifty ducats, he fent him back the next morning to the count.

It is no wonder that Lopez upon his arrival was received by his mafter with open arms. was scarce under the necessity of relating the fuccess of his commission, since Frederick had already fo strong and authentic a proof of it. He delivered him, however, the other five hundred ducats, with a letter from the merchant at Cologne, in which he told him, he readily embraced that opportunity of rendering him a fervice, and made no doubt that he should be reimburfed as foon as it was convenient, concluding, that if he wanted a further fum to compleat V

to

fo

hi

fu

te

an

of

pleat his equipage, he might command it, and that he hoped before it was long, to fend him fome good news of his father. All this good fortune could not fail of aftonishing a young man, who had hitherto met with so little. He blamed himself for his past distrust, gave various inflances of grateful piety, and formed within himself three useful resolutions; the first was, never to drink above a moderate quantity of wine; the second, never to play on any persuasion, or in any company whatever; the third was, never to marry any other woman than Eugenia. To these it may seem supersuous to add, that he determined never to part with

Lonez.

d

ıt

-

-

at

He was punctual in attending count d'Arco at Aix la Chapelle, returned with him from thence into Bavaria, and remained with the regiment about two years, in all which space he heard nothing from his father or of Eugenia. He came back at the end of that time to Aix la Chapelle, with intent to proceed from thence to Antwerp, his affairs through great oeconomy and steady adherence to his former refolutions, being in a very good condition, and his debt at Cologne discharged. But while he meditated his journey to Antwerp, with as much privacy as possible, his concerns took a new turn, which he could not either foresee or expect, and which would have given him more joy, if they had not been in fome measure qualified by his incertainty about his father, and by the loss of his old and faithful fervant, which from the humanity of his temper, he regretted as much as he deserved; and it would not be easy to carry the expression of his forrow higher.

One

One morning, when he was alone writing letters in his closet, and had given directions not to be disturbed, Lopez informed him, that there was an old man, who pressed to speak with him upon matters of great importance; upon orders given for his admittance, he appeared dreffed in deep mourning, and having paid his respects, asked, if he was major Speelman, of count d'Arco's regiment? And upon being answered, that he was; after a profound obeifance, he added, then, Sir, you are now my master. As the man faw that the major did not at all understand him, he defired they might be left alone; upon which Lopez withdrew, not dreaming, with all his Spanish fagacity, that this difmal messenger should be the bearer of glad x la Charelle, recarned with him sgnibit

You are, continued the stranger, the fon of Mr. Speelman of Antwerp, who married fuch a lady? I am, replied the major. The baron, her brother and your uncle, added he, who for many years together perfecuted your father, and I believe broke his own fifter's heart, received fome time ago an account from his relation and yours; that you were advanced to this post in the elector of Bavaria's fervice. He was then declining in his health, and much altered in his temper; whether owing to his fense of his approaching end, or from the unwearied admonitions of his confessor, becomes not me to inquire. It is evident from his will, that from this time he determined to make you his heir, and as he died five weeks ago, you are fo. I have been twentyfive years in his fervice, his estates are in a good condition, produce at prefent upwards of nine thousand florins per annum, and are capable of One great

great improvements. The baron died at his castle five miles from Liege, to which I wish, Sir, that you would repair, that I may render my last duty to the family, by putting you in full posession of all that belongs to you, and pass the

remainder of my days in a quiet retreat.

to

re

m

b

s,

it.

le

S

.

ď

a

r

8

g

d

d

9

f

t

Major Speelman returned him thanks for his diligence and probity; directed Lopez to provide him an apartment in the fame house, and promifed him he would come to fome resolution in a day or two. Whether Lopez's joy was more lively than his mafter's, or whether from fome other cause, so it was, that in a few hours he felt himself much indisposed. He concealed it as well as he could, that he might not leffen his master's satisfaction. But the next day he was so ill, he was obliged to keep his bed. major procured him the best assistance that phyfic could afford. His fever was violent, and as he was near fixty, the doctors foon despaired of his recovery; however, as he had a robust conflitution, they afterwards changed their opinions, and thought he would get over it. On the evening of that day on which they thought him best, he relapsed, and about midnight, desired the baron's steward, who fat up with him, to call his master out of bed, and to leave them alone, which the good old man did as haftily as the nature of such a commission required.

The major was no fooner feated by his bedfide, than Lopez collecting his spirits as well as he was able, turned towards him, and said with a faint voice, I am dying, Sir, and all my regret is, that I do not see you compleatly happy. If I have rendered you some acceptable services, I derived the power of serving you from another hand; this lady, faid he, reaching him a picture, enabled me to do what I did. I know your honour and gratitude too well to have the least doubt.—Here he was taken speechless; the major was obliged to rise and call for help; in a few hours after he died, without being able to utter a word. It is impossible to paint the trouble and perplexity with which his master was filled by this melancholy accident. He fent for the steward into his closet, gave him strict orders to take care of whatever effects his deceased servant had lest, and to see that his suneral was performed in a manner suitable to the friendship that he had for him while living.

When his grief was in some measure subfided, he fent for the old man, and afked him, if amongst the papers of the deceased, he had found any letters? Neither letters nor papers had he, replied the old fleward, his wealth confifted in his cloaths, the horse you gave him, and about three hundred ducats, which he delivered to me before his death, and defired that I would give them you, with the most passionate expressions of duty and affection. The major could not help shedding tears. Has Lopez, fays he, made me his heir? I give you all he left, as an earnest of my kindness. Observing that the old man looked earnestly on the picture which lay upon the table, he asked him, if he had feen it before; he answered in the negative. He then asked him, if he knew it; he said he did, but that he was not able to tell him the lady's name; all he knew concerning her, was, that she lived handsomely but very privately at Liege, and that she was remarkable for her piety and charity. This picture, faid the major, must

must have been drawn for her when she was young; she is not elder than yourself, replied he. Well, said the major, it will not be long before we see her; after to-morrow we will set out for Liege.

re,

10-

aft

he

1 a

to

he

er

le

m

is

1-

e

d

All the perplexities that Speelman had been in, scarce equalled that in which he found himself at this juncture, arising from the sense he was under of the obligations he owed to this unknown person, and the resolution from which he determined never to fwerve, of marrying none but Eugenia. He recollected, that when he more than once told the story of that lady to Lopez, and proposed sending him to Antwerp to make enquiries after her; his answer was, mind your affairs, it is time enough to think of marriage; when a proper feafon comes, we shall either find her unmarried, or being difengaged, you cannot be long at a loss for a wife. He fancied that he now understood this, and that Lopez meant to drive things off in hopes that Eugenia might be married. His head then run upon some lady at Cologne, and that possibly his old steward might be mistaken. He determined however to fatisfy himself in that respect, and if he met with any disappointment, to make a tour to Cologne, in hopes of learning somewhat from his good friend the merchant.

He hired a coach for himself and the old man, being attended by two servants on horseback. When they arrived at Liege, he directed the steward to learn the lady's name, which when he had heard, he was not at all the wiser. He considered of the matter all night, and the next morning, about eleven, went alone to the house and enquired for her; he was told, she was at church, but expected home every moment.

I 4 The

The apartment into which he was introduced, was very neat, yet had nothing of magnificence; but he had scarce time to observe it before the lady entered. He neither knew her nor she him: but after he had defired the fervant might withdraw, he paid his respects in the most submisfive manner, and told her his name was Frederick Speelman, upon which she changed countenance, and had fallen upon the floor, if he had not caught her in his arms, placed her in an armed chair, and then called for affiftance. As foon as fhe came to herfelf. The defired he would withdraw into another room till she had reco-

vered herself enough to speak to him.

He waited there a full half hour, and was then admitted to a fecond audience, the lady was still in the armed chair, but pretty well come to herfelf, and having defired him to be feated, ordered the fervants to retire, and then intreated him to inform her of his business. My business, madam, replied he, lies in a very narrow compass; a person who was possessed of this picture, told me, that I was under great obligations to the person for whom it was drawn, and that can be none but yourfelf. What is become of that person, said the lady? He is dead, madam, answered he. Alas, poor Lopez, · faid she, wiping the tears from her eyes, and died without revealing my fecret. Yes, madam replied the major; all he told me, was, that I stand indebted to you for my life and liberty, and the rank I hold in the elector of Bavaria's fervice. Really Sir ! faid she. After fo fair a confession, I may presume, that you are determined to be grateful. As grateful, madam, continued the major, in much confusion, as a man

The Adventures of Frederick, &c. 177 man can be, whose heart is engaged, and has been so ever since he was sensible that he had one.

ced,

ce;

m;

th-

nifick

te-

ad

an

As

ıld

0-

en ill

r-

r-

N

S

Most singular gratitude indeed, continued the lady; but am I to conclude from thence you are married; no, madam, said he, still more consused, I have not so much as seen that person since the time I mentioned. I believe, returned the lady, you are mistaken. Upon this, he threw himself at her feet, and cried, is it possible, do I then behold Eugenia! yes, Frederick, answered the lady; and how much soever her face may be changed, she is the same in every other respect, as when she delivered you her bracelet.

After his first transports on the discovery were over, and his mind again in some measure composed, he earnestly entreated her, to acquaint him with what had happened after their feparation at Antwerp, in which he faid, he was fo much the more curious, because, notwithstanding all the enquiries he made, he had never been able to collect any thing that could afford him the least fatisfaction; whereas he was thoroughly apprised, that there was scarce a transaction of his life of which she had not already a perfect knowledge. If there be, Frederick, fays she, I am not at all defirous of any explanation, I am very well contented with what I know, and perhaps there may be some reason, that you should be contented in your turn; I have not escaped vexation more than yourself, and yet all that has happened to me contains nothing very extraordinary, and will fall therefore within a narrow compass, which I believe will prove the I 5

most pleasing circumstance attending my re-

60

"When I left Antwerp, it was to pay a visit to a lady who had been formerly edu-" cated by Melufina, and my flay there had been longer, if the death of my mother had not " occasioned my being recalled. She died of a difeafe, that is fometimes the confequence of " matrimony, I mean of a broken heart. She brought my father a large fortune, a great " part of which he squandered away upon other women. What he could not touch is all I have at present. The sum of one thousand " ducats that my mother had faved, was in " your father's hands, which was known to " nobody; but foon after her death he paid " them very honestly to Melufina, with the ad-"dition of two hundred more, that arose from " the interest. With the last mentioned fum for " my private occasions, I returned to my fa-" ther's house, where the first news I heard " was, that poor Lopez had been turned away " for the involuntary discovery of my father's " amour with the person who waited upon my " mother, older than herfelf, and not near " fo handsome. I fent the poor fellow for-"ty ducats, and promifed to take care of " him. My father was very fond of me for " about two months, when I fell ill of the " fmall-pox, and at the hazard of my life, was removed to the curate's house, because his " miftress was afraid of catching the distemper. " As foon as I recovered, I wrote to the baron " for leave to return to Antwerp, which he " very readily granted, and I remained there with Melufina till her death, which happened

The Adventures of Frederick, &c. 179 " at the close of the succeeding year. She left " me her jewels, which were worth fix thou-" fand ducats, and with them and the thou-" fand ducats that were my mother's, I re-" moved hither to the house of a relation, at-"tended only by a maid fervant and Lopez. " It was about this time I had the news of your " misfortune at Cologne, upon which I fent " Lopez thither with the jewels to a merchant, " who had been your father's correspondent. "He employed a prieft to manage your escape, " and as foon as that was effected, took the " shortest rout to Augsburgh, where you met "him. Before he left me, perceiving how " much I was altered by the small-pox, I caused " this picture to be drawn, which he carried " with him, and which he must have died sud-" denly, or he would have explained to you. " In a year after my mother's death, my father " married her woman, whom he left a widow " with two fons, in circumstances none of the " best. When I had a right to dispose of my-" felf and my fortune, which is scarce ten "thousand ducats, I took this house in which " you find me, and have fpent my revenue in " the maintenance of a small family, and in re-" lieving the poor; and most of my time in " reading and in prayers for your prosperity."

du-

had

not

fa

of

She

eat

ner

I

nd

in

to

d

When she had done speaking, she took up the picture which was set in filligree, and pressing the two opposite gold points on the side, the picture slipt out, and discovered on the back of the plate, upon which the sace was enamelled, these words, Eugenia Maria Clara de Braquemont, now residing at Liege, under the name of Maria Ittinhem, which was her mother's; thus

I 6

Frederick,

Frederick, fays the, all my history and fecrets are revealed, except, that finding you had no farther occasion for them, I withdrew the jewels from Cologne, which were left in the merchants hand, as a fund for the fums with which he might at any time supply you, and indeed at his own request; for your credit was fo well established with him, that he defired no better fecurity. As for Lopez, he had my directions to find fome way of attaching himself to your person, which your good fortune at play facilitated to our wish. After these eclaircissments, they dined together, and it was agreed, that major Speelman should first regulate the affairs of his uncle's fuccession, and that the marriage should be then celebrated at Liege, which was accordingly done. In a few years after, Mr. Speelman's father arrived in Holland, with a competent, though not a great fortune, from the Indies. By his, joined to his lady's perfuations, the young gentleman quitted the army a little after the peace of Ryfwick, and then went to refide at Bruffels, where my flory ends.

I am much afraid that you have thought me tedious, for which my inexperience will be fome excuse; but I should forfeit all hopes of pardon, if I should trespass farther upon your patience, by making unnecessary and impertinent remarks, more especially as I am still to have recourse to your goodness, for giving a favourable ear to verses, which I am sensible will convince you, whatever acquaintance I have with the muses, they have very little with me. But besides this general apology, I am, captain Courtly, bound to task your pardon, particularly, since I have not only borrowed your stanza, but even prosecuted

ts

lo

ts

ıt

n

d

d

your thoughts, and used my utmost endeavours to render that structure, hinted to be unfinished in your poem, rather more compleat by my own; though I doubt in such a manner that the different skill of the architects will be easily seen. You do me great honour, replied the captain, though I am consident you are going to ruin the credit of my verses.

I.

Service American service

Is life a barren spot! or shall we say,
It passes human powers to make it bear;
I wilderness, through which to find our way,
And safely stepping, scape each secret snare,
Transcends our wisdom and exceeds our care?
Sad state it were! Inheritance forlorn!
Left to fate's distates, or to fortune's scorn,
The lot of man could never sure be borne.

II.

Or is the road to ev'ry other art,

With ease discover'd, or by chance inspir'd,
Save that which teaches how to guide the heart;
Science most sweet, skill most to be destr'd,
Learning most wanted, least to be acquir'd?

Be this our search thro nature's ample plan,
To trace the faculties and end of man,
And his capacity for bliss to scan.

a great lead of time and pairs, even hip.

The honest farmer, who with thought and pain, Thro' changing seasons, watches o'er his field; No copious harvest ever hopes to gain;

182 The Generous Lovers; or,

The fown with judgment, and with labour till'd,
Unless each other duty be fulfill'd;
This done, he patient lifts to heav'n his eyes,
Trusts to the sun for heat, for rain the skies;
Nor doubts his grain with usury shall rise.

IV.

To learn a common trade, seven winters pass,
In service grating mix'd with labour vile,
How large a portion of time's fleeting glass?
With little ease or comfort all the while,
And this to gain the knowledge of a toil:
But gain'd, it gives at least a certainty
Of some subsistence from our industry,
And though not riches, independency.

V.

Just principles, with far more ease are taught,
Since youthful minds are for such culture sit;
And by the light of fair examples caught;
The generous stame increases with their wit,
While meaner appetites to this submit.
Who fears himself, has nothing left to fear,
His deeds are honest, and his words sincere,
Virtue once rooted, will thro' life appear.

I cannot help thinking, Charlotte, faid lady Constantia, that this performance must have cost you a great deal of time and pains, even supposing, which I take to be the truth, that you picked it out of a more copious relation. There is not certainly any thing of that spirit or vivacity, which recommends the French and Italian, but more especially the Spanish novels; but as it

is written with a high regard to probability, as well as to virtuous fentiments, we are much obliged to you; and though we have exceeded the usual time, I have not observed, that any of the audience shewed the least figns of inattention or fatigue. So far from it, faid Sir Lawrence Testy, that of all our entertainments, none please me better. Old Speelman's is an excellent character, a man of probity without pride, indulging his favourite tafte, and yet avoiding immoderate expence, a tender father without weakness, and a hero in diffress, upon right principles. Charlotte you are a good girl; the choice of this story is the proof of a right mind; if I was thirty years younger I should be your lover, and as it is, I am your admirer; and during the fhort time I have to live, shall always remember the pleafure you have given me.

I agree entirely with you, Sir Lawrence, faid Mrs Anguish, but you must give me leave to fay, that young Speelman's is to the full as agreeable a character as the father's. The modesty of his behaviour, the ardour of his affection, and his unalterable constancy, are qualities that render him truly admirable, and are very natural from the account of his descent, fince he feems to have inherited the Dutch candour of his father, and that Spanish honour which is fo juftly esteemed in all the old houses of Brabant. I was going to make the very fame remark, continued Mr. Pensive, in regard to Eugenia, whose manners are likewise compounded of the inflexible puncto of one nation, and the agreeable frankness of the other; both of which seem to me perfectly well expressed, in her conversation with Frederick on the unfolding of their adventures.

At this rate, added captain Courtly, I am under a necessity of praising Lopez, that I may not feem to fteal other people's thoughts; and I must confess, I am not at all displeased at it; for the humour of that honest Biscaneer is, I think, very justly touched. Great virtues are so far from being leffened by appearing in persons whom fortune has placed in mean stations, that on the contrary they deserve to be so much the more confidered. If therefore I may be allowed to speak my mind freely, I think, in point of uprightness of heart, he was inferior to none of the rest; and as to that whimsical zeal of defending his master against himself, it is at once the freest and finest stroke in the whole piece.

So much for Lopez, interrupted Beaumont, and if Courtly had reason to complain, what must become of me, who have no choice left, but that of giving my full approbation to the whole, which I do with great fincerity. I would do it more amply, young lady, faid he, turning to Charlotte, but that it is within half an hour of morning, and to-morrow you know we must all go to church. Methinks, however, there would be no hurt in our meeting in the evening,

vegitires.

The Adventures of Frederick, &c. 185 evening, fince Sir Lawrence and Mr. Penfive propose to go away on Monday. I second that motion, said Sir Lawrence, but it is upon condition, Beaumont, that you tell us some grave flory; I know well enough that you have been a useful man in this affair, and I dare say, can be agreeable too, if you please. Mr. Beaumont, faid lady Constantia, has a great regard for you, Sir Lawrence, as well as a high efteem for all this company, and therefore I will venture to answer for his obedience. Why then let us part, faid Beaumont, that there may appear nothing of drowfiness in my performance; her ladyship promised to exempt me: but ladies promises, I find, are seldom kept. With old men, interrupted Courtly; Miss Charlotte accept of all our thanks, and be affured, that we shall rest the better for that disposition of mind in which we leave you. Adieu ladies!

dogerstate met in the caseout. Indage colle

was purchased on the ends open enters. Soveral peared, but account could not where see the peared, but account could not where see the mily bis Lawrence (aid productly, that where they were enabling lactions, arrested black of the ended they was county in the latter. Here made they had the rester we county as a latter, the county was county as, the county of subob a reality encited them therefore account to the formation. And the county is the county of the co

you serre will hat been a say like your las-

other about the execution of the

d



HEROIC CHARI

OR, THE

ISION of KING ALFRED.

From our ancient Chronicles.



HE wetness of the day having prey vented any company from viliting T Co lady Constantia, as was usual; the members of this amiable fociety met in the parlour, an hour earlier than usual, except Beaumont, who

was punctual to the usual appointment. Several enquiries were made after him before he appeared, but nobody could tell where he was, only Sir Lawrence faid pleasantly, that while they were making holiday, mafter Beaumont was conning his leffon. This made them smile upon his coming in, the cause of which he readily gueffed; and therefore turning to lady Constantia; I did not know, madam, said he, that your ladyship was here, otherwise I had not fpent an hour, walking in the matted gallery with Mr. Modish, who is tutor to your neighbour's fons. Then I am fure you had fome difpute, faid lady Constantia, for I never knew you agree half that time in my life; your ladythip, thip, replied Beaumont, has a very threwd guess, we really were disputing, and with some degree of warmth.

In that, interposed Sir Lawrence, you have the better of me, Beaumont, you can be warm without ever rifing into a paffion, but that is not altogether the case of Modish. He is too well bred indeed to fay rude things, or to call names; but he has a very provoking way of supposing people convinced, though they declare the contrary; and of making very light of those arguments which he least understands. But pray, what was the point between you? The subject of our debate, continued Mr. Beaumont, was this; Mr. Modish afferted, that excluding the lights given us by religion, about which he holds it not proper to dispute at all, it was very difficult, if not impossible, to conceive how men should converse with, or receive any impressions from spiritual beings. As I was of a different opinion, I laboured to explain the thing to him as well as I could, though I readily agreed, that the bulk of the relations that we have on that subject, were idle, superstitious, and unworthy of credit.

You made him then a fair concession, said Mr. Pensive, and yet perhaps, it is problematical, whether the old humour of believing such stories in the lump, or the modern one of rejecting all as absurd, be not equally remote from truth. Credulity and incredulity, at least in my sentiments, like most other extreams, have short passages, by which they communicate, and therefore in these matters, I have always thought the safest way is not to believe or disbelieve hastily. There my friend, added Courtly, I

cannot

bo

th

fu

C

ronma.

cannot agree with you, for if you speak of sacts, one must believe or disbelieve after hearing the evidence, or else there is an end of all kind of proof depending upon testimony, which, notwithstanding what some great wits have said upon it, is that kind of proof, by which things of the utmost consequence in common life, ever were and ever must be determined. But instead of entering into a debate ourselves, let us, if you please, hear how Mr. Beaumont managed it, notwithstanding he made, as you and I seem to think, so large a concession, by which, however, I suppose that he meant no more than laying aside any advantages that he might have drawn from those kind of relations, and the

credit formerly given to them.

What I offered to his confideration, continued Mr. Beaumont, was no more than this, that the human mind was capable of arriving at truth by speculation, as well as by other kinds of information; that in the case of the former, the mind might be faid to act upon itself, as in the latter it was acted upon from things without. From thence I argued, that if the mind could act upon its own faculties, we might from thence form fome conception of the manner in which another spiritual being might act upon the mind. To this I added, that it feemed to me, that this was the very notion that the antients had of what they called inspiration; and that when the poets, for example, invoked the muses, they meant to desire their assistance in this way; and as the opinion of fuch an inspiration prevailed generally amongst mankind, it could not be held irrational to conclude, that it had fome foundation; fince upon going to the bottom ets,

the

of

ot-

ud

25

er

ad

if

it,

to

7.

n

e

e

d

bottom of things, we very rarely found that opinions became common without having any grounds at all, but that at all events whether this notion was grounded upon fact or not, it fully proved that fuch an impression might be conceived, because men in general confessed and afferted it.

Pray Sir, faid Mr. Penfive, what reply did your antagonist make to this? None at all, returned Beaumont, for the clock striking, I took my leave in order to come hither. These, said lady Constantia, may be, for any thing I know, very entertaining topicks of conversation amongst you gentlemen, but they are really a little beyond our comprehension. Give me leave therefore to put you in mind, Mr. Beaumont, that we have a right from your promise to expect fomething of another nature, and that may afford us and the whole company equal fatisfaction. Aye, aye, Beaumont, cried Sir Lawrence, my lady is in the right, and tho' we should be glad at some other time to have this point more fully discussed, yet, as her ladyship fays, you are under a promise, and we are all of us in great expectation. Let us therefore leave these abstrufe matters, and return to that kind of conversation which may be of common utility. I must take part of the blame upon myfelf, fince I drew you in to give us an account of your dispute, but I stand corrected, and I know her ladyship is always ready to pardon when people confess their faults and demand it. Mr. Courtly and I, faid Mr. Pensive, expect also to be excused upon the very same terms.

Fair and foftly, gentlemen, returned Beaumont, I would be as ready as any of you to ask Build

tu

her ladyship's pardon, if I was conscious of having given any just cause of offence; but as I humbly presume that I have not, methinks I stand in no need of it. It is a very unfortunate humour that prevails at prefent, that many people, to spare their own attention, very cavalierly reject all ferious subjects as beyond their sphere. To furnish some colour for this, they persuade themselves that they are fit only to amuse the brains of Monks and Hermits, and that having nothing at all to do with them, it would be equally vain and vexatious to permit fuch whims entrance into their thoughts. But is it really fo? The finest gentleman in the world, the greatest beauty that ever lived, is either the object of admiration in the coffin? The man of extensive abilities, the woman of superior understanding, do either attract respect in a shroud? No, certainly. There is fomething then wanting that gave life, and vigour, and grace, and spirit, and majesty, which drew affection, which extorted submission, and shall we say, that this, which enabled them to command over others, was not worth being known to themselves? We cannot change our nature, what madness then to be ignorant of it? Do we not condemn young people who never confider that in time they must grow old, and shall we in the same breath acquit those who fancy that what concerns the mind affects them less, than if we discoursed about their bodies? Why should we deceive ourselves with a fond opinion, that nothing is to be comprehended here of what will be fully comprehended by us all hereafter? Mifery is the consequence of indifcretion in this world, why then should we think that indolence is a fit guide

guide in our journey to the next? It is unnatural to see young people always grave, but we esteem it a mark of folly to see them ever gigling. There are fit seasons for all things, and I hope I shall make you sensible, that what I

was faying was in its fit feafon.

W-

sI

I

ite

le,

e-

e.

le

ne

e

S

When I promised to obey that lady, I knew that she was to be obeyed on the evening of a day dedicated to grave subjects, I could not therefore suspect that this company should imagine I would follow the modern practice of the theatres, and furnish a pantomine entertainment to wipe out those useful impressions that have been made by the folemn truths we have heard. No fuch thing ever entered into my head, and yet I should be unwilling to be thought precise. We may be innocent without levity, and the understanding may be sometimes entertained as well as the imagination. We frequently fee children, and those who for want of abilities never come to years of discretion, deluded or terrified by fuperstitious tales, which a tolerable reason may easily discern to be false, because they are frequently contradictory. We ought not therefore to conclude from thence, that whatever is extraordinary must be of course incredible, or for instance, that because knaves undertake to interpret, and fools believe that they can tell them the meaning of dreams, there never was a dream that had any meaning. This would not be confonant to reason, would be directly repugnant to the best histories of all countries, and offer violence to every one's personal experience. We ought to be better acquainted before we pronounce upon it, either affirmatively or negatively. We must know with certainty what a dream is, before we can fay with any fecurity of being in the right, what it is not. There have been many theories of dreams, and there may be many more; it is not my purpose either to examine the old or to establish new. All I pretend to affert is, that if in the relation of what is called an extraordinary dream, there be nothing absurd, contradictory, or derogatory of truths that are certainly established, we cannot with any degree of justice pronounce it idle,

fabulous, and unworthy of credit.

Ordinary men have generally speaking ordinary dreams, and there is furely no reason to wonder, that they are not wifer fleeping than waking. Some people believe they fleep fo found as not to dream at all, which perhaps may not be true, for their imagination may be ftrong, tho' their memory is weak; and if what has affected the one, be not retained by the other, they may be very eafily misled in their sentiments; but it is quite otherwise with men of extensive abilities, who live temperately, and have strong faculties; for as the thoughts of such persons, when waking, differ very far from those of the bulk of mankind, so we may easily conceive that their fensations are quicker even in fleep, and I should not be afraid of contradiction, if I appealed to experience that they are fo. But we may still go a step higher, and without offending against right reason affert, it may be very well conceived, that to answer extraordinary purposes, to reward extraordinary merit, or to facilitate attempts of an extraordinary nature, fuch persons may have communications from superior beings. History facred and prophane vouches this, Alexander the Great faw in his isdw

ny

ot.

ofe

W.

on

ry

n-

e,

i-

to

n

d

t

his fleep the figure of a venerable person, who by the promise of success encouraged him to undertake prodigious things. This made fo frong an impression upon his mind, that he could not help paying higher marks of fubmiffion and respect to the high priest of the Jews, than he was wont to receive from others, because he knew the appearance of that high prieft was the very fame he had feen in his dream. is no fact in the world better supported than this, for besides the faith of a great prince, and the credit of historians, it was sustained likewise by records, the Jews having great privileges granted them by that glorious conqueror on this very account. But if upon these testimonies we give credit to this fact, we must likewise admit, that under circumstances of a fimilar nature, a fact of this kind can never be objected to as incredible. I hope my reasoning on this head is conclusive.

But it is not enough to be convinced of this truth, it is very expedient that we should be as well fatisfied of its utility in many instances, as in that particularly which I have instanced. Men are called to the performance of things that feem to exceed human abilities, confequently they stand in need of more than human affistance; if therefore we admit that this world is under the direction of a divine providence, and that it is so, history rightly considered, proves to a demonfiration; we must also admit that nothing can be more fuitable to that kind of government than fuch fort of communications upon very particular occasions. By this manner of stating the thing we clearly and plainly diffinguish, that a wife man may and ought to reject abfurd, inconnected, VOL. I.

connected, and unsupported stories, and that for the very fame reasons which induce, and even bind him to believe whatever comes to his view with evidence and characters worthy of his behef, however extraordinary in its nature. The wild adventures of heroes in romances, draw no imputation upon the heroes of history, and a man would be juffly thought mad, who should pretend that there is no more credit due to the commentaries of Cæfar, than to the history of Amadis de Gaule. Our monkish historians have been cenfured, and very justly censured for credulity and superstition; but it is, without doubt, a very great extravagancy to affert from thence that there is nothing of true history to be collected from their writings. We ought not to treat them the worse for being our countrymen, or having wrote concerning our country, more especially when we pay an implicit belief to other authors who flourished in distant countries, and lived fome centuries before them; this is not equal or impartial, and therefore cannot be reafonable, we ought if we read for instruction, to winnow out the corn as well as we can, and to reject the chaff in both cases.

m

di

W

th

W

fo

po

he

vy

for

du

A

øn

fut

his

TI

of

idea

With respect to the little history which I am going to relate, it is indifferent to me whether you believe it or not, consider it in what light you please, either as a matter of fact, or as a parable, it cannot fail of instructing. For my own part, I speak ingenuously when I say, that there is nothing in it, which to me appears at all improbable. It is a just and noble instance of heroick virtue in the breast of one of the wisest and worthiest monarchs, whose hands have swayed the English scepter; it gives us a very consistent

or

'n

w

e-

10

10

ld

ne of

le

-

t,

ė

0

1,

re

d

ot

-

0

d

n

7

ıt

n

.

.

ft

d

rt

idea of his plety and charity, at the same time that it teaches us these are things pleasing in the sight of HIM to whom even monarchs are accountable; in short, it is a happy illustration of what will be found a certain and never failing maxim,

Who thinks not of hereafter thrives not here.

Alfred was a prince, who, if our historians describe him right, and he had the poculiar good fortune to have his actions recorded by those who lived in his own time, and even who lived about him, equally amiable in person, and accomplified with respect to abilities; he accompanied his father when as yet but a child to Rome, which gave him such an inclination to letters, as made him not only the patron of learned men, during his own life, but likewife engaged him, with infinite pains and labour, to become himfelf the most learned man in his whole dominions. He was also naturally brave, and had great talents for the art of war, neither was he a despicable politician, and yet with all these high qualities he wanted ambition. He was fo far from enlying his brethren, who by turns wore the crown of the West Saxons, that he bore with patience some flights that were put upon him, and their reglects in not doing him that justice which was due to a private man, affifting them notwithhanding with his person, his purse, and his parts an every occasion; so that he was in reality a apport to the throne from the very time that his years rendered him able to act in its defence. This fingular turn of mind made him capable of living personally well even with princes who K 2 could

could have no great kindness for him, fince they treated him fo ill, and made him the darling of the people, who faw with pleasure the dawn of those virtues, that were one day to render them

happy.

In those times the best parts of this island were for the fins of its inhabitants delivered up to the most merciless of all foreign invaders, I mean the Danes, who over-run the country from Dover to York, and marked their passage whereever they came by flaughter, burning and devaftation; few places had force fufficient, and none were held fo facred as to escape them. Plunder was their only object, and murder their common method of obtaining it. The Saxons were then divided into feveral little kingdoms, which in their turn felt the weight of this dreadful scourge, the West Saxons last, who were the most powerful of all. Ethelred then wore the crown, and his brother Alfred affifted him with his councils and his fword. They fought the Danes often, and many times were victorious, but to very little purpose, fince they had to deal with an enemy whom no defeats could diminish, because of their constant supplies from abroad, and whom no treaties could bind, because they made and broke them for their convenience.

In this difmal fituation of things, Ethelred dying of a wound he received in the battle of Merden near the Devizes in Wiltshire, Alfred was called to the throne as well by his brother's will, as by the unanimous voice of the nobles, and people; notwithftanding which he accepted the regal power very unwillingly, for his love to peace, and a private life is the only weakness or folly with which we find him charged by any writer.

enabled

writer. He was however obliged to assume the crown, the weight of which he forefaw, for he was forced to fight for it, before it was well fixed upon his head, and this not against one, but many enemies, and which was worst of all, without any respite, insomuch that in the space of a year he had nine pitched battles all obstinately fought, and yet none of them decifive.

ey

of

of

m

nd

ир

I

m

e-

e-

br

n.

ir

ns

S,

1-

ne l

ne

h

le

5,

al

1,

d

of

d

S

d

r

He very eafily perceived, that notwithstanding the fidelity and valour of his subjects, and that they often overcame their enemies, yet by the continuance of these conflicts they must be inevitably wore out, unless some method could be found to put things more upon a level, in order to make victory worth fighting for. It was with this view that he turned his thoughts to a naval strength, in hopes that by guarding the coasts of the island, new invasions might be prevented; discerning clearly, that the advantages arising from a sea fight, in which his subjects had the better, were far superior to any success on land; because it not only discouraged fresh attempts, but cut off those supplies which had hitherto rendered the Danes invincible, by making one battle only a prelude to another; fo that which ever way an engagement turned, the loss he fustained therein made it a real defeat, his armies becoming gradually thinner and weaker. This scheme in some measure took effect, for his cruizing squadrons frequently beat the Danes, hindered their landing, and forced them to think of carrying their destructive arms into other The vessels of which he made use countries. were a kind of gallies, and by the help of these he fometimes transported detachments of horse from one part of the island to another, which K 3

enabled them to cut off flraggling parties of Danes that were roving up and down the open country in fearch of sublistence or of plunder; and if this step had been taken earlier, it might in all probability have answered his utmost hopes, and have put it in his power to have cleared his dominions entirely of strangers, or reduced them into a state of subjection, that might in time

have repaired the loss of his own people.

But as it was begun late, when the public treafure was in a manner exhaufted, and when confequently he could not fit out fleets on every fide, at least of a force sufficient to answer the purpose, for which they were employed; the Danes found means to prevent being attacked at fea by the Saxon foundrons. In order to this they withdrew their armies northwards, where their supplies landed with fewer difficulties, and when they were joined by them marched fouthwards again and committed new depredations. Alfred faw this with inexpressible grief, as it feemed to threaten his fubjects with total destruction, notwithstanding all the precautions he could take, or the small advantages that he gained from time to time by furprizing and beating their detachments. He continued however indefatigable in his labours, and left no stone unturned to fuffain the finking cause of the Saxons, notwithstanding it grew every day more and more desperate. The Danes on the other hand made it the principal point of their policy to destroy him, which once effected, they persuaded them-felves that his subjects would have fallen into despair, and have lost entirely all power of refistance. But tho' this measure was well contrived, it was nevertheless found impracticable in

of

en

r.; ht

3,

13

n

e

in the execution; for the King was fo much better acquainted with the country than they, and the face of it was so very different from what it now is, that on every fide there were frong passages, inaccessible marshes, or thick forests, to which, as occasion required, he could retreat, and convey himself by routs, to which they were totally strangers, from one place to another. that while they made themselves sure of investing him in a wood with a few of his attendants, they had the news, perhaps, of his intercepting with a considerable body of forces, the troops they expected from distant parts of the kingdom, and which, when he had cut off, his people dispersed again, and the Danes were at as great a loss as ever to know what was become of him, till from fome new stroke they learned the place of his retreat, and then loft him again by the same method.

In this manner this wife and good prince spent the first fix years of his reign, often in the field, oftener flying, always in danger, furrounded with the cares, but never tafting the pleasures of royalty; and not only without a court, but deftitute of a place where to hide his head. Instead of being diffinguished by purple robes, he was usually constrained to wear a disguise, that he might the better conceal himself from the Danes: for fo much had he travelled, and with fo great familiarity he conversed with all ranks, that he was known to most part of his own subjects. Known to them in the most amiable character, that of a young prince endowed with great and good qualities, and absolutely free from vices, ever ready to expose his person for their preservation, and willingly taking a share in those hardships,

hardships, from which he found it impossible to defend them. Attentive to whatever might contribute to the publick safety, and from that motive only careful of his own, willing to purfue any measure that might promote his subjects good, how difagreeable foever it might be to himself; so much master of his passions and inclinations, that they never flood in the way when any proposition was offered that had a tendency to the good of the people: for which reason his affairs admitting of no better expedient, he listened to the offers made by the Danes of concluding a firm and lafting peace; he could not but be fuspicious of their fincerity, and yet knowing no other way by which a short season of repole, so necessary to the afflicted Saxons, could be procured, he was content to try what by this method might be done. The negotiation was fudden, for neither the manners of those times, nor the fituation that things were in, would allow of any delay; in short, a peace was concluded, the Danes retired out of his territories about the coming on of winter, and his subjects were in hopes, that during the enfuing fpring and fummer, they might have time to recover themselves a little, and take some steps towards restoring their affairs. Delusive hopes, which Alfred however was constrained to encourage, that they might be defended from abfolute despair. Delusive hopes, that might have been still more fatal to them, if their perfidious enemies had acted with any tolerable address; but as they made the peace to ferve an immediate purpose, that was no fooner ferved, than they plainly discovered that they meant to observe this, no better than

rec and from

tha

mai was con the and

Sax difi tha me der wh

> not fen per the wit fee

> fro

had elfi hit we pli

wa va as

D

The Vision of King Alfred. 201 than they had done every other treaty of the same kind.

The Danes having drawn in all their parties, received recruits that had landed in feveral places. and being informed that a new supply was at sea from Denmark, returned without any ceremony into the country of the West Saxons, and marched directly to Chippenham in Wilts, which was then large, populous, and a place of great confideration, where their kings usually spent their fummer months, and from thence burnt and plundered all the country round about. The Saxons, who had not the least suspecion of this dismal event, were dispersed in such a manner, that it was impossible to assemble any body of men capable of making head against these invaders; on the contrary, the news struck every where fuch a terror, that the people retiring from all places that stood exposed, took shelter, notwithstanding the rigour of the season, in the fens, forests and mountains, as choosing rather to perish by hunger or wild beasts, than to fall into the hands of an enemy without mercy, and without faith. Thus the ruin of the kingdom feemed to be compleated by that very step which had been taken, from a persuasion that nothing elfe could preserve it; and even those, who had hitherto hazarded every thing in its defence, were struck with such a panick, that they applied themselves for the first time to provide as well as they could for the fecurity of their private estates, without any respect to the publick, as apprehending it to be past redemption. The Danes themselves triumphed with unusual infolence, supposing, that as they had ruined the East Angles, Mercia and other principalities, K 5

they had now put an end to the West Saxon government, and were at liberty to extend their inroads with impunity, wherever the hopes of

booty might afford them any temptation.

The king less credulous, and more upon his guard, experience rather than years having taught him not to be milled by appearances, fent away the children of the royal family early to a place of fafety; after which, perceiving that reliftance would have been but a raffmess in his circumstances, he withdrew with a few persons of di-Minction and others of his household to a secure retreat, which, at that feafon of the year especially, was altogether inaccessible to the Danes, and of the fidelity of the Saxons he neither had, or indeed ever received cause to doubt. There he proposed to remain hid till a proper occasion offered, either for collecting his people again into a body when the present strong impression of fear was in some measure removed, or to make his escape to the coasts, upon which he had full many detachments, that ferved as marines when his foundron failed upon a cruize, and covered the port towns when the veffels returned from fea; for being the very depth of winter, and the weather unufually fevere, it was impoffible at that juncture, either to undertake any immediate expedition, or to reach the fea coaffs without running the utmost hazard of being in-Sercepted. Comit ind

The place he chose for shelter was a fenny island between the rivers Thon and Parret in Somersetshire, confisting of a pretty large extent of marthy ground overgrown with alders, that afforded cover to deer and other game. In the center of this island there was about two acres

of

hou

his

nar

200

no

cer

wa

of

wa

the

by

WC

the

qu

tu

ne

ffi

wi

pe

th

in

th

ev

de

0

it

·b

ances.

of folid ground upon which he built a wooden house or fort for the reception of himself and his company, and from thence it received the name of Ethælingey, which in the Saxon tongue fignifies the ifle of Nobles, celebrated by our ancient poets and historians, but of which there now remains no kind of veftige or memory, except it may be in the village of Athelny, which stands near the place where this monarch afterwards founded a monastery. The only means of getting into this island was either by boats or wading, except in the midft of fummer, when the people of the country knew how to enter it by a small winding path that lay through the woods, and which was rendered utterly impaffible as foon as the rains began to fall, by which the marshes round about became impracticable quagmires; fo that in effect it was a fort of natural fortification, which, confidering the rudeness of the military art in those times, might be stiled almost impregnable.

The principal difficulty he had to struggle with, was to find the means of subliftence, having no magazines or stores of any kind, but depending for his daily food on the industry of those about him in hunting and fishing, and the incertain supplies of bread and drink, which those in the neighbouring countries, who knew his diffress, were able to convey. Yet in this fad fituation he still kept up his courage, and however disconsolate, was very far from falling into despair. This was the pure effects of his piety. of which having an early tincture in his infancy, it grew up with, and fortified his reason; so that being now in his thirtieth year, it furnished him with hope, in the midft of melancholy appear-K 6

d

ances, and administred to him such comforts in his calamities, that his mind was never distracted or disordered, or his temper so discomposed, as to make him uneasy to himself or others. On the contrary, his discourses were pleasant and chearful, calculated to keep up the spirits of those about him, to encourage them to bear their present sufferings with patience, and to expect that providence in due time would deliver him and them from the miseries that had been brought upon them by that luxury, which universally prevailed before the invasion of the Danes, and the report of which had probably attracted them.

But after all, it is not either improbable or impossible, that by degrees the king's firmness might have been wore out, more especially when he faw every thing growing worse and worse, and that dejection of mind, which fits people for flavery, fpreading through all ranks of his subjects, from an apprehension, that they had no longer a strength sufficient to defend themselves, no ally from whom they could expect affiftance, while on the contrary, the superiority of their enemies was conftantly increasing, and their conquests extending on every fide. It is hard to fay, whether in such a state of things, either philosophic constancy, or that higher degree of confidence, which can only flow from religion, could have long supported this brave prince, if when his affairs were at the very worst, he had not received a kind of confolation, which fuddenly revived his ardour, and instead of the weak and glimmering rays of hope, which now and then cheared his mind, filled his breast with a full assurance that he should triumph over all these difficulties,

The Vision of King Alfred. 205

difficulties, and live to govern his people in prof-

perity and peace.

It fell out one day, that all who accompanied him being abroad in the marshes breaking the ice, and trying if it was possible to catch some fish, he remained in the house with an old servant, whose labour in such cases could have been of little use. To amuse his melancholy moments, the king, as his cuftom was, had taken a book into his hand, and while he was deep in meditation a person knocked at the door. fervant having opened it, informed the king that it was one Nider, a poor old man almost famished with hunger and perishing with cold, who befought him by all the ties of humanity and religion to take compassion on his misery, and to afford him some relief in his distress. The king ordered, that he should be sent to the fire, and directed his fervant to examine and report the contents of their cupboard. This was a task very foon performed, the fervant giving his majesty to understand, that there was but one loaf of bread, that as day light was wearing away his people must speedily return, and very likely with empty hands, and, which was worfe, with empty stomachs. All which taken together the fervant looked upon as arguments more than fufficient to dispense with the king's parting with any thing, even to fo fad an object as he had before him.

But the benevolence of great minds, the magnanimity of monarchs, and the overflowings of christian charity are not to be restrained even by the fear of suffering themselves those wants which they relieve. The king ordered without hesitation, that half of the loaf should be given

the starving old man, and condescended to say grace to his meal in these words. Blessed be God for his gifts! The fervant stood amazed at this act of royal charity, when in parting with half a loaf, the king bestowed the moiety of all that he had. " As for Alfred, pleased with having refcued from the jaws of death his fellow creature and his subject, he took up his book again and refumed his meditations. But it was not long before he felt his spirits, which had been ftirred by this accident, fettle into an unufual composure, which suddenly gave way to a drowfinels, that stealing upon his fenses locked them up in a fweet flumber, which however lafted not long, and with which notwithstanding the king found his body wonderfully refreshed. But this was nothing in comparison of the satisfaction he felt in his mind, for in that short sleep he faw the appearance of St. Cuthbert, who told him that God having brought his people to a fense of their fins, would graciously withdraw those evils, by which they had been so heavily chastised, and that fince, in the midft of want, he had fo liberally bestowed his alms upon one more diftreffed than himself, he should be speedily reflored to his kingdom; adding, that as the feal of this promife, and that he might depend upon its performance, his company would quickly return with a supply of provisions much beyond his and their expectations. He had scarce time to reflect upon this fingular vision, and return thanks to heaven for fo great a favour, when his attendants arrived, and brought with them fuch a quantity of fish as might have sufficed a much larger number. The king looked upon this fupply with double aftonishment, as coming very opportunely,

epportunely, after the great straits to which they had been put, and at the same time affording him a convincing confirmation of the truth of his dream; so that he participated with great lightness of heart in the common joy, occasioned by so good a supper, and sound his people as well disposed as he could wish, to relish his exhortations, and to co-operate with him, as soon as the season would permit, in drawing together a body of men from all quarters, that they might once more try their fortune in the field, against a nation, who to numberless slagrant crimes, had added that of perjury, than which, none was more likely to expose them to

the stroke of divine vengeance.

While the king was meditating on the means of effecting, what he had so much at heart, he was furprized with a piece of good news, fo much the more welcome, as it was altogether befide and beyond his expectation. The Danes, under the command of their two famous princes. Hubba and Hungar, had made a violent irruption into Wales, and deftroyed a vaft extent of country with fire and fword. After their return from this expedition, they entered Devonshire, and laid every thing waste; till hearing that the earl had retired, with what few forces he had, into the castle of Kinwith, not far from the mouth of the river Tau, they resolved to invest it immediately, and to famish all that were within it. The earl of Devon and his Saxons very eafily penetrated their delign, at the fame time they faw that nothing could prevent its taking effect. Believing therefore, that it was prudence to prefer an honourable death by the fword, to that of lingering with hunger;

ouf

fuc

of

tak

ear

for

hir

cal

ob

VO

the

be

to

dr

w

m

he

ev

Al

C

fa

1

hunger; and knowing, that if they had any chance for victory, it must be before their strength was diminished by want; they suddenly issued from the castle, with that determined spirit which attends despair; and in the first sury of their onset dispatched Hubba, and that body of Danes which was under his command. The rest soon after shared the same sate, except those who made a timely retreat to their ships, and sled from that sury they could not withstand.

It was in this battle that the Saxons made themselves masters of the famous standard, called the Raven, from the picture of that bird, embroidered therein, by the three fifters of Hubba and Hungar, which struck the whole Danish nation with terror, because this banner was esteemed by them fatal; for other countries have had their fables as well as ours, and it was univerfally believed by the Danes, that their fortune in war was inseparably connected with the posfession of that standard; so that the loss was accounted irreparable, and a fignal that victory had quitted them and was gone over to the fide of the Saxons. An opinion, which however idle and ridiculous in itself, was attended with prodigious consequences, as it wonderfully raised the courage of a people on the point of being fubdued, and difmayed those who had been hitherto conquered, from a notion, that this magical standard was a sure pledge of success in every expedition.

Alfred perceiving how much all who were about him were elevated by this news, resolved to lose as little time as possible, and to fall upon the Danes before they were recovered from this sit of consternation. But though he acted vigor-ously,

oully, he avoided precipitation, and having fent fuch as he could truft, to invite the inhabitants of Wiltshire, Somersetshire and Hampshire, to take up arms; he employed those who came earliest to his affistance, in improving the little fort he had raised in his island, that it might afford him a more secure and comfortable retreat, in case he should, on any emergency, find himself obliged to withdraw thither. He likewise endeavoured to gain the best intelligence he could of the fituation and condition of the enemy; and being informed, that their princes had recourse to feafting, as the furest means of restoring Danish courage; he adventured himself, in the dress of a harper, to visit their head quarters; where by his skill, in playing on that instrument, and his merry and facetious conversation, he spent a whole fortnight, much to their satisfaction and much more to his own, playing every day in the king's tent, going freely whereever he thought fit, and being highly carefled and sumptuously entertained wherever he came. Having thus learned all he wanted to know. with that certainty which his own eyes only could give, he shifted his disguise, and returned fafely to his own company.

The place appointed for the Saxon army to assemble, was on the side of Sellwood forest in Wiltshire; and as he had passed the Easter holidays in the Danish camp, so Alfred kept Whitsuntide in his own; where the sight of this monarch, after being so long hid, was so agreeable to his faithful subjects, that he soon found himself at the head of a body of men, who forgetting past dangers and disasters, shewed an earnest desire of putting once more their fortune to a trial

rity

to

val

tha

in

fro

the

his

fel

as the

by

ph

tie

ab

civ

to

fet

m

an

pe

in

vě

pì

di

fo

trial in the field, which the king did not long delay. The Danes were at Eddington with an army, much superior in number, and were intent upon drawing in their parties, in order to attack the Saxons with their whole force; but Alfred prevented them, and by a sudden march surprised them, when they least expected him; routed them with a prodigious slaughter, and following his victory, besieged the king, with the small remains of his broken forces, in a castle, where they were forced to submit to such terms as their generous victor thought sit to pre-

scribe.

I sili

This was the beginning of those glorious victories, by which our noble conqueror broke the Danish strength, and made way for the restitution of the Saxon government. Wife princes turn even general calamities into public bene-Alfred finding all the leffer principalities of his nation entirely overwhelmed by the Danes, took this opportunity to lay the foundation of one great monarchy, without any imbutation of ambition or injuffice. He was too equitable a prince to think of raising his own power at the expence of his neighbours: but when foreign invaders had ruined the constitutions, which formerly subfifted, he thought it not barely expedient, but held it to be his duty to raile a new structure upon these ruins, which was likely to prove fo much the ftronger, as the foundation was broader and better laid. He had a good title to do this by right of arms, but he had a better from the universal confent of the people, as well Danes as Saxons, who were wifely delirous to provide for their future fecurity, by fubmitting to the best of monarchs and to the best of men.

His first care was, to put his military and naval establishments on the fairest footing possible, so that they might answer all the ends of the nation. in supporting the laws, and protecting them from foreign invalions, without prejudice to their liberties. He fucceeded in this to his wish; his foldiers and feamen did not confider themfelves as mercenaries, who fought for hire, but as men, called to the noble office of defending the rights of the crown, and of their country by land and fea; and his distributions were fo prudently made, that they were not continually tied to this duty, but returned, after a reasonable fervice, to their respective families, and the civil offices of life, by which due care was taken to keep up a military spirit, and the noble profession of arms did not degenerate into a trade.

But, though this alone might fufficiently commend the memory of Alfred to posterity; yet there are many other circumstances in his history, that justify the high respect paid him, by those writers more especially, who lived in or near his time. He was not only the deliverer and protector, but the legislator also of his people. He it was, who collected and digested into an easy, useful and consistent form, those laws and cuftoms that had prevailed in the feveral Saxon principalities, supplying their defects, pruning their excrefences, and reconciling their differences, so as to frame out of the whole a most excellent and defirable constitution, which he established by his absolute power, after it was approved by an affembly of the states; and fo became equally binding upon his fuccessors

and their subjects. For he made use of that transcendent authority he obtained by his sword, to give life and vigour to his laws; which, according to his will, ratified by their consent, became the rightful and indefeasible inheritance of

his people.

In this fense he was as much the founder of English liberty, as he was of the English monarchy; for his wisdom taught him, that nothing that was violent could last long; and therefore he contrived, that the support of the constitution, which he established, should arise from the interest that the people had therein; and that the power and greatness of his succesfors should rest upon the solid basis of their purfuing the public good; which while they did, the wheels of government went on, as directed folely by the king's will, and the machine never fuffered any check, but when he, who held the reins of government, endeavoured to turn it into a wrong road. Neither did he give the people only a right to the laws, but entrufted the execution to them, so far as the nature of things would allow; and this was the great excellence of the Saxon conflitution, and endeared it so much to the people, that it became the object of every man's attention, as much or more than his private concerns.

His views for the benefit of mankind did not folely regard posterity, but were carried immediately into practice; so that his hopes of the future success of his system were sounded in the felicity, with which he saw it attended in his own time. He did not barely restore the Saxon power, or his subjects to their possessions, but revived learning, reformed their manners,

introduced

int

CO

fu

fre

of

bi

he

Ca

de

fo

tl

T

introduced arts, raifed manufactures, and encouraged trade. All this he did, though the fucceeding course of his life was far from being free from troubles, or unmolested by finister accidents. New invalions were attempted, and as often repulsed; the Danes frequently revolted, but were constantly reduced; other vexations he met with, but he triumphed over all. He came to the title of king without a kingdom; he left it flourishing and vaftly extended, for the bounds of the whole island were scarce the bounds of his dominions. His subjects were rude, illiterate and poor; he rendered them civilized, learned and wealthy: diforders and diftractions reigned every where, when he afcended the throne; but at his demise he left all things in good order, and in a state of profound peace. He improved upon all that his roval ancestors had done before him, but left to his fuccessors an example inimitable from its perfection.

He was as far from affecting fame, as he was free from vanity; and for any thing that appears from records, contented himself with the modest title, of king of the West Saxons. Yet his reputation reached to the continent, and drew many testimonies of reverence and respect from the greatest amongst contemporary princes, nay it penetrated into the east; and the patriarch of Jerusalem addressed him in terms worthy of a primitive bishop, to the most pious amongst christian princes. But what is still more wonderful, his intelligence and his compassion reached farther, for he sent alms to the Christians in the Indies, by the hands of the bishop of Sherburn; and the curiosities brought from thence

by that prelate, were preserved many ages after in the treasury of the cathedral church of Salifbury, when the episcopal residence was transferred thither. I say nothing of the discoveries that were attempted by his command to the north-east, or of a multitude of other memorable actions, for these are but the outlines of his character, not the history of his atchievements; of which, if time had not deprived us of it, we might have had an elegant and authentic memorial, deduced by his own pen; for like Cæsar, he wrote his commentaries, under the plain and humble title, of the story of Al-

fred:

He was no less amiable in his private life than glorious in his public conduct. Patient in adversity, moderate in prosperity, unaffected in his piety, always indefatigable, and always modest. Very learned, for the times in which he lived, and zealous in promoting learning, of which as he gave public testimonies to the university of Oxford; fo the conversation of men of letters was the great solace of his cares, and the principal delight of his private hours. He left behind him many valuable writings, originals and tranflations; fome on facred subjects, others on history and policy, more respecting morality, the conduct of human life, and the education of youth. He had a correct tafte in architecture and other sciences; liberally rewarded ingenious men in all professions, which drew numbers of them to his court. In fine, he was an affectionate hulband, a tender father, a kind mafter, a constant friend, and full of benevolence to all mankind. He lived upwards of fifty, and reigned near thirty years: his body was interred in Hyde

ther experience the reverons as nefer

Hyd

flar rec fub ing rep fue

fo the call you a thi

m ciche of no bi

I

n

te

1

Hyde abbey near Winchester; removed from thence to the cathedral, where his bones were exposed to the barbarous insults of the soldiers in the great rebellion; but by the pious care of a reverend prelate, his remains now rest quietly at Oxford, and his memory will be revered as long as men retain any respect for virtue or goodness.

This, madam, (addressing himself to lady Conflantia;) is I hope, an apology for that short recital of a dispute, not wholly foreign to my subject; and which, with an humble disqualify ing of your own understanding, you would have represented as beyond your reach. But, ladies, fuch speculations neither are, or ought to be fo; it is your duty to make them fometimes the objects of your private meditations; for it can never be a point of politeness to dissemble your acquaintance with them, more especially in a company of private friends. The freedom that I use, is an evidence of the truth of what I fay; and I must confess, it would be a pain to me to speak, where I had so much as a suspicion that freedom would be ill taken, or truth heard with displeasure. The glittering affemblies of the world would hear lectures of this fort, not only without relish, but with contempt; but what would be necessary there to excite attention, and attract applause, would meet with neither in this place.

We are all of us unaffected with, or thoroughly convinced of the vanity of fuch pursuits, which corrupt the inclinations of youth, and bring on an old age, full of infirmities and incapable of reverence; what I have related, I thought suitable to the task which you imposed;

and though it rifes into the superior spheres of life, yet it furnishes us with an example equally worthy and capable of imitation. Kings themfelves, as this flory shews, may fall into the greatest difficulties, and feel even the extremities of want; can then persons of another rank flatter themselves with an exemption from the strokes of fortune, or to speak with greater propriety, from the like dispensations? Ought we not then to learn from Alfred, to bear them with patience, to hope with constancy, and never to think, that while our circumstances leave us any thing, we may dispense with charity? These are lessons, hard indeed to be practifed, but which it is the more necessary therefore to repeat, because of their importance. Let me try however, whether I have yet so much of music in my nature, as to conclude this long discourse with verses, not altogether unworthy of your hearing, of private friends. The gnirand mater to about one to equation as a

I must condition it would be a pain to

With words of anger, and with brow fevere, We chide our children from their idle play; And often tell them, that the time draws near, When busy labour must employ the day. To banish tops and taw, have we the will, Tho' pearly tears bedew the infant face? To teach them books and arts, have we the skill, As things to which their pastimes must give place? So wife compar'd to them, need we be told, As children rife to manhood, men grow old?

i belogini nor holder alle och er elegent filme

connect what I have related

II.

Th

Ag

Be W

faic

dif

we

ing

fuit live ing

am

be differentiated for a perficuence of a trace for

The thirst of pleasure, love of toys succeeds,
To women, wine, or war the youngster bends;
A stricter rein his boistrous passion needs,
To keep him in the path to nobler ends.
Grave lectures then we read, to check his heat,
Point him examples, quote each moral sage;
And oft this wholsome maxim we repeat,
The sins of youth, produce the woes of age.
Think we not once, while thus we spend our breath,
Age sew arrive at, all must meet with death.

police are after a commentation or ich is well

Net wife and just, and virtuous our design,

Most prudent all the doctrine which we preach;
This only wanting in our discipline,

That teaching others, we ourselves should teach.

If the great end of man be endless bliss,

Then vain alike all steeting pleasures are;

For that attends another life not this,

And both must equally demand our care.

Be this the touchstone then of hope and sear,

Who thinks not of hereafter, thrives not here.

We are certainly much obliged to you, Sir, faid lady Constantia, for this long and laboured discourse, from which I must confess, I am very well satisfied that what you premised, concerning your dispute with our neighbour, was a very suitable introduction to what you afterwards delivered; I shall likewise freely admit, that having spent every day this week in entertaining amusements, it was highly reasonable this should Vol. 1.

iš

to

m

wl

up

no

is

per

we

cui

pre

fer

im

pel

cor

day

the

fati

and

gar

fuc!

no

ceff

avo

fupe

per

spec

to t

with

eve

fion

he I natu

be distinguished by a performance of a more serious kind. There is however one circumflance, that ought methinks to be attended to in the application, which is, that though it appears from this narrative, there may be cases in which dreams are very fignificant; yet this does not at all hinder, that the vulgar superstition of interpreting dreams, or the ill grounded humours of remembring and regarding them, should be exploded and treated with just contempt. For fuch inflances as you have mentioned, being very rare, and depending folely on the favour of the fupreme being, ought not to be urged as an objection against a general rule, which is well supported by experience, as at the same time it is

grounded on the principles of good sense.

I should be very ungrateful, said Sir Lawrence Testy, for that pleasure which our friend has given me, if I did not freely acknowledge, that he has fet this remarkable paffage in our hiftory in a very agreeable and uleful light. There is certainly nothing that fo much affects generous minds as contemplating majesty in diffres; when the royal character is supported by the eclat of superior virtues, and the monarch appears such from the transcendent faculties of his mind, when stripped of all the exterior pomp, that serves only to impress reverence on the vulgar. Alfred appears to me greater, as well as more amiable, in his hermitage at Athelny, than in his palace at Winchester; and I am satisfied, that his future magnificence was founded upon right motives, when I reflect on his heroic charity, at the time a cupboard was his treasury, and a fingle loaf circumscribed his civil list. We ought to infer from hence, that whoever

is jealous of his own rank, should justify his title to it by his actions in all circumstances, and be as careful to appear a great and good man in the meanest offices of private life, as in those in which he considers the public as having an eye

upon his behaviour.

For my own part, added Mrs. Anguish, I am not able to express near so much as I feel. is a comfortable, and I hope no unreasonable persuasion, that even private persons, who mean well and act right, may, under particular circumstances, and where they find themselves oppressed by difficulties, which they have not deferved, become capable of receiving confolatory impressions, that may support their hopes, expel their fears, and teach them to expect with confidence, that their innocence shall be one day or other manifested, if not rewarded. ther can I deny, that it gives me a very pleafing satisfaction, that a person I so much esteem, and for whose judgment I have so great a regard, is of the fame opinion, and has fet it in fuch a light, as that there may remain few or no doubts about it.

There is, faid Mr. Pensive, great caution necessary in treating these delicate points, so as to avoid the two great extreams of incredulity and superstition; and it is with much pleasure, that I perceive our friend has trod with great circumspection this narrow path, without deviating either to the right or to the lest, and that he concluded with a short and general application, leaving every one at liberty to make particular conclusions, from the nature of the evidence, which he has so exactly and agreeably stated. Human nature is common to all, and those actions of

th

in

th

fu

na

th

ru

m

th

al

he

m

re

to

21

th

n

0

C

it

W

r

h

1

the great, which shew it most to advantage, afford us the most convincing, and at the same time the most pleasing proofs of their elevation. For I agree entirely with Sir Lawrence, that all the subsequent actions of Alfred, which make so thining a figure in history, are not near so proper to imprint a true notion of his character, as this portraiture of him in his fufferings. Magnanimity in the midst of power, and magnificence supported by wealth, will always dazzle the eyes of the multitude; but fortitude in the lowest state, and generosity in the depth of poverty, must strike even the most critical judges, and persuade them, that there are souls superior to the accidents of fortune, and by their native lustre capable of attracting the highest veneration, without any other affiftance than the fplendour of their virtues.

Take the picture in what light you will, continued Courtly, it has a charming appearance, and it gives me great delight to fee fo worthy a piece, exercise so fine a pencil, the warmth of my friend's genius, the freedom of his hand, and those bold and masterly touches, which flow from the just feeling of those virtues, which he represents, must intitle him to our good will, as well as our commendation. Hold Sir, faid Beaumont, I am already covered with more praises than I know how to bear; give me leave to prevent you from faying too much upon fo trivial a subject. But perhaps, it may not be amiss to observe, upon the latter part of lady Constantia's discourse, that this relation is perfectly well guarded against any suspicion of superstitious credulity. The circumstances of Alfred's vision, if it may be called fo, render it perfectly confiftent with the conduct

conduct of divine providence. There is nothing in the representation, that can be thought indecent, extravagant, or improbable; and as to the feal of its authenticity, from the unexpected fuccess of his servants in fishing, it is extremely natural, and therefore credible. Upon the whole, there is nothing in this story that tends to corrupt the understanding, or to mislead the judgment; on the contrary, it teaches us to merit the divine favour, by imitating as far as we are able the divine nature, and encourages us to hope, that if we do this, how deep foever our diffress may be, that power, in whom we trust, will fecure us alike from destruction and despair. -But to infift no longer on this head. Give me leave to enquire, Sir Lawrence, if you fill remain fixed to your resolution of quitting us to-morrow. The weather is very indifferent, and if you have no preffing occasion, methinks riding in the rain cannot tempt you to leave us. Ma boughwall

Mr. Beaumont's petition, faid lady Constantia, is with my participation, and if it had not been for a certain reason, I should have moved this matter myself. Without doubt, what he fays of riding in the rain, deferves to be doubly considered; for first, it is a thing unpleasant in itself, and next, it might be infer'd, the place could not be very pleasant, which a wife man would quit in fuch weather. You fee, Sir Lawrence, to what artifices the ladies are obliged to have recourse, to decline faying expressly, they are unwilling to part with vifitors they like. Visitors, madam, said Sir Lawrence, you might have stiled us your admirers, it would have been as agreeable to truth, and have made your

fo

in

te

re

is

tl

d

p

t

10

0

1

arguments stronger; but I doubt that was a word too which you declined from choice. But in the name of wonder, madam, why all this ceremony, do you really think that we want the excuse of bad weather, to palliate the inclination we have to remain here? Or could you fuspect, that your commands would not have been obeyed, if they had not been favoured by this weeping of the skies? The truth is, that without any invitation, we should have put off our departure till Tuesday; nor should we have fixed fo fhort a time, but that we have thoughts of troubling you again in about a couple of months. Instead therefore of contriving how to keep us, your ladyships politicks may, all in good time, be employed in finding an expedient,

to get rid of us.

That time, faid Miss Charlotte, will not come in hafte. But what fay you, Captain Courtly? That I am very glad, faid he, of this refpite; I have promised Sir Lawrence and Mr. Penfive to spend a week with them in shooting and fishing. Very well, faid lady Constantia, and won't you promise to meet them here again? Methinks after two months rambling diverfions, fuch a week as the last might prove no difagreeable amusement. I am entirely of your ladyship's opinion, said captain Courtly, and shall be extremely punctual to an invitation, that does me fo much honour. Very gallant indeed, continued Mrs. Anguish, I doubt, Mr. Courtly, you have a mind to lay aside the humour you have fo long maintained, of being indifferent towards our fex. There are humours, madam, replied Courtly, that people really have; but did you never hear, that some folks +17774

folks have been fo unlucky as to have humours imputed to them that they have not. Will you tell me fincerely, whether a man testifies best his regard to the fex, by making love to every fine woman he fees, or by avoiding all profeffions, till he fees a woman with whom he is really in love? That question is not easily anfwered, added Mrs. Anguish; in Spain, the first is a thing always expected, and I attribute to that filly humour, many of the unlucky accidents that happen there. In England, such a practice ought to be esteemed ridiculous, and the man who makes love, when he is really in love, should have an exclusive claim to the title of a man of honour. I thank you, madam, faid Courtly, bowing, there will come a time, perhaps, when I shall put you in mind to regifter my claim.

Let us, faid Mr. Beaumont, put an end to compliments; either that clock goes too fast, or elfe it is very late, and yet I could wish that lady Constantia would acquaint us with that certain reason, at which she hinted just now. It may be, answered that lady, since you lost your privi-lege of exemption, that I may also be inclined, as the company indulges me one meeting more, to submit some little matter to their censure. You are very obliging indeed, madam, replied Beaumont, and every body has the best reason in the world, to be fatisfied with your impartiality and good fense, on this, as on all other occafions. Our travellers, I believe, will not regret the wet weather, or one day's postponing their journey. We will then be rather abrupt at present, faid Sir Lawrence, in taking our leave, that we may have the more leifure to-morrow night.

L4

its till ton avid and refreme

-listorquis vaicione value qual es morrous est

at the feet of two made when whom belies

ha

of

in

pi e:

W

CONCLUSION.

- was referred as to soft another the most of the

S the gentlemen proposed to set out very early the next morning, the A company rose the moment supper was over on Monday night, and withdrew to the usual place of meeting; they were no fooner feated, than Sir Lawrence Testy, in the name of the rest, gave lady Constantia thanks, for the many civilities and favours they had received; commended her open and generous hospitality; that ease and benevolence which she expressed in the distribution of her bounties, and that decorum which she knew how to preserve in the midst of a freedom, which was rendered doubly delightful by that very circumstance. At the close, he expa-tiated on the particular pleasure they had received in these evening amusements, which he faid, was an invention that did honour to her ladyship's genius and judgment, as it furnished them with the means of passing their time very agreeably, furnished them a multitude of useful hints, that might otherwise have escaped their observation, and taught them the art of criticifing the conduct of mankind, in a manner equally instructive to themselves, and innocent with respect to their neighbours. Mrs.

anatomical

Mrs. Anguish then took up the discourse, by remarking, that the last circumstance, was not only a point of beauty but of importance. We have indeed, faid she, a right to avail ourselves of other people's misfortunes, and it is a maxim laid down by the moralists in general, that we ought to profit by other people's examples to copy those virtues, by which we see them rise into diffinguished happiness, and to avoid those vices by which we perceive, that they have been precipitated into misery and disgrace. But it is extremely difficult to do this, more especially in the latter branch, without injuring those, at whose expence we are to improve. How specious foever the pretence may be, that we aim only at the amendment of our own lives, by entering into a detection of theirs, it is extremely hard, if not utterly impossible, to prevent a criminal curiofity from taking the lead in our enquiries, and even indulging a malignant pleasure, in laying open the follies of those, whom, upon fuch occasions, we think ourselves at liberty to treat without referve.

I am, said Mr. Pensive, entirely in that lady's sentiments, and the rather, because I have constantly observed, that notwithstanding the justification of such discourses is sounded on the desire of improvement, yet people usually incline to declaim on the vices and sollies, to which they have the least propensity themselves. This shews the solidity of what that lady has been saying, and that after all, such conversations afford great opportunities of exercising bitterness of heart, and giving a loose to vindictive spleen, after a thin covering of moral resections has, for decency's sake, been spread, to give the air of an

anatomical lecture, to what may with greater justice be stilled an assassination. For who is there that has kept even the best company, without discerning, that to maltreat the unfortunate, and to stab the characters of the absent, is at least considered as a very slight offence, and if a few insignificant precautions be taken, as no offence at all?

The warmth that Mr. Pensive has expressed, added Miss Charlotte, shews great rectitude of judgment, as well as much purity of mind. There is no fault more generally condemned, than a disposition to calumny, and yet it is a disposition from which few people are free. Such as are licentious in their own conduct, take infinite pleasure in picking up stories of other people, and in repeating them without fcruple, whether true or false; as if their own characters were fome way mended, by detracting from those of others, or that the croud of offenders lessened the nature of an offence. In this, as there is fomething false and foolish, it agrees perfectly with a vicious disposition, and becomes, when discovered, an object of aversion and contempt; but it is very wonderful, that some whose lives are regular, and even severe, have at the same time a tincture of this humour, and aim at heightening the luftre of their own reputation, by throwing those of their neighbours into shade. The fact is very strange, and would be altogether incredible, if daily experience did not force us to acknowldge, that it is incontestably true.

I protest, said captain Courtly, Miss Charlotte is become a perfect philosopher, and treats the most serious subjects, with the air and wisdom

of

of

uti

wh

me

hu

CO

ter

of

to

ye

te

1

fo

ft

of an Arpasia. An excellent instance this of the utility of our evening conferences, for I doubt, whether for the future I shall call them amusements, fince I perceive, that by speculating upon human nature, we in reality grow wifer, and contract a habit of connecting at first fight, exterior actions with their interior motives; a kind of science, which for any thing I know, is not to be acquired any other way. Methinks these young ladies have been admitted into this myfterious knowledge a little too foon, or at least I perfuade myself, their husbands will think so; for as things fland at prefent, gentlemen feem to apprehend nothing so much as superior underflanding in their conforts, and indeed they have commonly too much reason to apprehend it. from the consciousness of their own defects.

In my poor opinion, faid Calista, this method of conveying instruction is peculiarly adapted to our fex, as it has a tendency to teach difcretion early, which otherwise we are in danger of never acquiring till it be too late. inquisitive temper in young women is very justly discouraged, because it commonly leads them to an acquaintance with things that it is improper, and even indecent for them to know; yet without being inquisitive, information is not to be had, eyen in matters that concern the common occurrences of life; fo that what between the fear of being thought pert or bufy, and the danger of being ignorant or fimple, we find it very difficult to attain sufficient lights for the direction of our conduct; at the same time that our peace and prosperity depend upon it. Is not this very hard? There is nothing more common, than for men to flatter us with all the attri-

attributes of perfection, in which they must certainly talk very idly, unless they suppose we are infinitely more favoured by nature than themfelves; which, whenever they are but a little ferious, they conftantly deny. Is not this very inconfiftent? To suppose our sex weaker than theirs, from the immutable laws of order that prevail through the universe, and at the same time to deprive us of the privilege of education, and to discourage that curiofity which might bring us to knowledge, or knowledge to us, is very unreasonable, I might say cruel. But the striking out this method of making us acquainted with the world, shewing us the seeds of good and evil actions, and the fad confequences of what, at first fight, seemed but trivial mistakes, is a prodigious advantage; and, as far as my abilities enable me to discern, free from every inconvenience. If I have either taken things wrong, or carried them too far, I should be extremely obliged to any body who would let me right.

1

Your fentiments and your language, Calista, said Beaumont, in a great measure destroy that ill founded notion, that women are inferior to men in their natural abilities, and you have very justly exposed the inhumanity of endeavouring to stop the progress of those abilities, and then to throw the weight of so unfair a proceeding upon nature. What you have said of slattery, is also very judicious, and take it from me, that none but knaves have a propensity to slattery, and that it is an incense they never pretend to offer, except to those whom they take to be fools. A man who is sincerely in love, may however slatter, without intending to do it.

it. His prepoffession disturbs his reason, and makes him see things fairer or brighter than they really are. He may therefore speak falsely, without uttering falsehoods. But this may be easily discovered, from the very manner in which they are spoken; his flattery will be abrupt and artless, whereas that of a man, who endeavours to deceive you, will be conveyed with address, and disguised under a thousand different forms. What you say of this manner of instructing, is strictly true. But methinks we have forgot the principal end of this meeting, which was, to hear something that lady Constantia had prepared, though of what kind, I profess I know not, and therefore am impatient to be informed.

Upon my word, faid Sir Lawrence, that is very true, and I had it strongly in my mind, when I rose from supper to come hither; but my desire of expressing my gratitude for past favours, before I received fresh obligations, induced me to make a short compliment to that lady, which brought on a conversation, that put the main business out of my head. Her ladyship will, I am sure, have the goodness to forgive me, and at the same time to believe, that all who are here, never attend with so much

fatisfaction as when the fpeaks.

After the lecture that Beaumont just now read against flattery, what you say, replied she, Sir Lawrence, seems a little too strong, but I shall however entertain so good an opinion of myself, as to suppose it is not entirely a compliment; but that having spent so many years in the world, I may have made so much use of my time, as to be able to surnish half an hour's conversation, that may not be altogether useless or disagreeable.

able. For if felf-love would fuffer us to fet our notions of ourselves a little below the truth, we should certainly find our account in it, by procuring a general bias in our favour, which nothing attracts so easily as modesty, nothing so effectually repels as pride. What I propose to say, and something also that I intend to read, by way of epilogue to our performance, will take up but very little time, and will fall in very naturally at the close of such observations, as any of the company may be inclined to make, and which therefore I should be unwilling to in-

terrupt.

According to your ladyfhip's own account of the matter, faid Beaumont, what you have prepared, by way of defert to our literary feaft, if without deviating into pedantry that expression may be allowed, can never come in more properly than at present. There is not, I think, a fingle person in the room, that has not treated that topic with great propriety, and confequently we are perfectly disposed to hear your ladythip's reflections, having already delivered our own. I likewise suspect, that you have raised a ftrong curiofity, by making use of the word epilogue, for I cannot conceive, what kind of epilogue fuch mixed performances can bear; but when I recollect, that your ladyship opened your plan with a copy of verfes, which however imperfect, had the good luck to please; I am in hopes that your conclusion will not be in profe. and as I have never yet feen any of your own poetic compositions, I shall esteem this epilogue a kind of curiofity. I fee plainly, that I trefpass on the patience of your audience, but I do it on purpose to mortify your ladythip's humility,

than

lity, and to let you see, that the Sir Lawrence is the best courtier amongst us, yet his compliments, however well turned, are so far from having the least taint of flattery, that they are precisely what compliments should be, truth hand-somely expressed; and now having done justice to myself, and to all who are present, I shall be filent in hopes of our receiving our reward.

To avoid being overcome with civilities, or to retort, Beaumont, your own argument, and prove all these fine reasonings to be so much downright flattery, faid her ladyship, I shall inform you, that what I intended, was indeed no more than a few hafty lines upon an odd plan; and to make these the more intelligible, by letting you know how fuch a thought came into my head, I find myfelf obliged to tell you a story, that if some motives did not oblige me to conceal certain circumstances of it, would put you in mind that I am an old woman. How fit a fubject this for compliments! What a topick for flattery! Beaumont has furnished a very handsome apology for flattering young women, and for telling pretty fibs, without incurring the odious name of liar : but what excuse he can find for disturbing the wits of a woman in years, is beyond my conception. But now to speak in character. and as an old woman should do, let me, as Prior fays, ---- put off my reflections, and come to my tale. and manage foat a cave but the

There flourished in the beginning of the prefent century, (to take things as low as possible) a nobleman, who was particularly distinguished for good sense, a fine taste and correct breeding. He moved in a superior sphere with the highest dignity, and was no less caressed in soreign courts

than in our own, and maintained the extensive reputation, he had acquired by a fuitable behaviour upon all occasions. He was far from affecting to fpeak in publick, and therefore did it rarely, and only when necessity required; but when he did, what he faid was plain, noble, elegant, concife, and to the purpose; so that he was heard with attention, and every body regretted that one who fpoke fo well, should speak so feldom. He wrote in the same manner, short, but not affected, with much perspicuity, and with fo much ease and strength at the same time, that it was impossible to read his letters, without perceiving, that they were written by one of the first men of the age. His conversation was very lively, and had less of reserve than the rest of his character; he was far from being talkative, but whatever he faid had either weight or foirit, according as the subject required; so that you never heard him speak, but you were instructed or pleased. He made the same, that is, the first figure wherever he came, and had this peculiar excellency, that in the cabinet, the camp and the court, he feemed precifely formed for the part he then fustained; fo that the statesman, the foldier, and the fine gentleman, interfered not at all with each other, but he feemed to put on his character like his cloaths, to fuit the place in which he was to appear; and with a facility, and even a negligence that was the reverse of affectation!

All this was fo confpicuous, fo certain, and fo superior to all contradiction, that the he wanted not enemies, for who is there that wants them? yet there was nobody so destitute of probity, as to attempt denying a circumstance of all

all that I have faid. Yet those who knew him in his youth, and from particular motives, were not inclined to bestow upon him more praises than he deferved, would fometimes fay, that they wondered how he had acquired these accomplishments, fince his education was not either regular or extraordinary, entering very early into the great career of life, and being thence forward fo perpetually occupied, that it could not be conceived, that he had much leifure for study or reflection. If in this there was any truth, as perhaps there might, instead of lessening, it rather raises the wonder; for with all the advantages that youth can possibly receive, it seldom happens, that fo compleat a character is formed, and to ascribe it to chance or accident. would be abfurd and ridiculous. Contingencies may help a character now and then, and experience as well as history may inform us, that a man in certain circumstances, or upon some particular occasion, has manifested wonderful virtue or furprizing abilities, that at other times was far from shining with equal lustre. But this nobleman's conduct, in the light that I have represented it, was perfectly uniform and constantly of a piece. His calmness and moderation never gave way to accident, his firmness and good fense never deserted him in any danger; the same politeness that recommended his youth, diftinguished him in his advanced years; and at the very time when he was the oracle of the state, he was one of the most gallant men in the drawing room; put on a ferious air when he entered the council chamber, and put it off when he came out. We need not wonder that a behaviour fo highly finished, should be univerfally admired, and at the fame time we must confess, that it could not be easily understood, more especially by those who looked to the bottom of things, and were sensible, that the finest and most curious pieces of work are, notwithstanding, raised upon certain principles, and depend upon some springs or other, how happily soever they may be concealed and kept out of

fight.

In the decline of this great man's life, when the hurry of the world was over, and there was no longer any reason to make a mystery of things, this very subject happened to be touched in his presence! it may be he perceived the meaning, it may be there was no meaning, but that a favourable occasion offering, he had a mind to flew, that ingenuity was among the number of the great qualities that he possessed, and therefore with the same ease and freedom that he difcourfed on the most trivial topicks, he expressed This fentiments upon this, and drew with a mafterly hand the outlines of a piece, which, if I had the skill to finish, would certainly appear -worthy of your approbation; if therefore there be any thing in it beautiful or great let it be ascribed to him; if it appears with any flaws or blemishes, let those be imputed to me. It is many -years fince I heard these passages, but they made fuch an impression at the time, as I flattered myfelf would never wear out, and I hope they are still so fresh, as to preserve something of their original likeness, tho' they may not have altogether that eclat, with which they came from entered the course counter, and bankeid.

The world, faid he, is very far from being fo bad a school as it is generally represented, and

66 those

66

66

66

" those who come into it early have one advan-" tage, that they understand it sooner and bet-" ter. I have heard philosophers value them-" felves upon the study of human nature, but I " have been often tempted to think from their discourses, that they had studied only that of " one man. It follows from hence, that their " notions are too refined for practice, whereas those who take their sentiments of men from " their acquaintance with men, are far less lia-66 ble to be deceived. A learned education has " many advantages, but considered at least in ff certain lights, it has fome disadvantages also. 16 It always loads the memory, it often gives a " wrong turn to the judgment. What is worft " of all, it is apt to make a young man think "he is knowing, at a feafon when being con-" scious of ignorance, is a point of the utmost " importance. He who is perfuaded of this, will be modeft, cautious and diligent, indulgent to his inferiors, affable to his equals, and 55 fubmiffive to those above him. These are " qualities that will render him beloved and " esteemed, and will at the same time open to " him many short paths to knowledge, more " especially that kind of practical knowledge, which is otherwise very difficult to be acquired, 44 and yet is of continual use. The necessity he "daily feels of feeking affiftance, will make "him ready so far as his power extends to serve " others, and the character of doing this, is " both the shortest and the furest way of pro-" curing friends. A fense of having no title 56 to preferment, but merit, is a kind of spur, that will never let a man rest till he attains it; " and while he measures his notions of it by mody

66

46

the rewards that attend it, he will continue to " aspire as long as there is any thing above him. " His own progress and the progress of others, will teach him the securest roads, and if he " fees a man stumble or fall, he will be fure not to tread in his path: his fatigues will render " him hardy, a necessary complaisance will give " him a tafte of pleasure, but the desire of ri-" fing, and the fear of lofing that reputation, " which has cost him so much, will, if he has " a true spirit, keep him from being a dupe to " pleasures. As diffidence taught him caution " in the beginning, fo experience will give him " a useful confidence by degrees, and the habit of feeing dangers and tharing them, when his 46 duty requires it, will wear away that terror that feizes upon unpractifed minds. In short, use, observation, success, disappointments, se good and ill fortune, will contribute equally so to instruct him, and not being governed by what other people have feen, he will always 66 find himself in a condition, to pursue the " measures that he has once planned; and as " these will be directed by judgment rather " than fancy, they will either lead him to his purpose at once, or if they fail, shew him where he mistook, and enable him to correct his error. He will fee the difference between firmnels and obstinacy, between changing, as reason requires, and irresolution, and between that favage virtue which the world never esteemed, and that abandoned corruption which the world will always despife. He will " not be cheated with the cant words of the " times, hurried along by the stream of a party, or refelve never to differ with a man, " whom

" whom he once thought his friend, or agree with another, whom, upon fome occasion, he " took to be his enemy. In short, he will not " fail with every wind, or attempt to fail against " it; he will not facrifice others to his interest, or his own interests to those of others; he will " neither court popularity nor shun it; and af-" ter all it will be his ruling maxim, that as no " man has fo good a right, fo no man can form " a truer judgment of his conduct than himself, which will free him from the fear of censure, " and prevent his growing giddy with applaufe. " For my own part, continued he, two thirds " of what I know I collected from conversation, " and the remaining third, by comparing what "I knew with what I heard, fifting out the truth, which having reduced within the nar-" rowest bounds possible, and having fixed this by way of maxim in my mind, it ferved as a " fort of artificial memory, fince by reflecting " upon it a little, I could easily recover the circumstances with which it was attended when " first received. The single inconvenience, to which this method of instruction remains exof posed is this, that the topicks of conversation are accidental, and that you cannot eafily inof form yourself on any point, without disco-" vering what you feek. This difficulty, tho' er great, admits of two folutions. If the mat-" ter be of a publick nature, you have nothing " to do but to frequent mixed companies, and " you cannot fail of hearing it canvaffed with force and freedom. There is not, generally " fpeaking, a fet of men who do less service to themselves, than the common herd of coffeehouse politicians, and yet they are very use-

pra

fee

de

to

ufe

bu

fid

be

tal

an

VC

th

cr

do

re

Y

I

" ful to others. Different men fee the fame thing in different lights, and amongst a mul-" titude of ridiculous and whimfical opinions, it is a hundred to one that you hear fomething to the purpose, or at least something that your own judgment can apply to the purpose. Gues-" fing is a fort of intelligence, and tho' it may " feem strange, it is nevertheless true, that per-66 fons who have very confused notions, and who argue from falle principles, or no princiof ples, hit the point, as those who shoot at random fometimes do the mark. But if the fub-" ject be fecret in its nature, and no help can be had this way, a man of dexterity will find " an art of feigning a case, wide in appear-" ance of that which he would have refolved, and yet built upon the same principles. 66 he may throw out on a proper occasion, and " with fafety take the judgment of those, whom of all men he would be least inclined to con-65 fult, or to confide in, if they knew his meaning. There are besides these other innocent " arts, by which a man of capacity may avail 46 himself of his neighbour's understanding, and " when all is done, there is no man fo wife as " not to need advice, and but very few fo pru-" dent as to use it."

I have given you the whole story at large, tho' it is the latter part only that makes to my purpose. You may remember, that I was desirous of having the argument of each of our stories reduced to a single line; by the help of which, I thought it might be practicable, to secure the retrospect of the whole discourse without much trouble; when I had effected this, it came into my head, that it might not be altogether impracticable.

practicable, to reduce all these scattered, and seemingly inconsistent hints into a kind of order, that without rendering them burthensome to the memory, might still render them more useful and instructive. Upon this plan I have built my epilogue, which whether you will consider as a kind of poetical exercise, not entirely beneath your notice, or as a whim, which after taking up an hour or two of my time, is made an instrument of murdering a few minutes of yours, will depend upon your judgment, and if the last should prove the case, will not prove a crime beyond the power of forgiveness, for wisdom is often in the wish of those who can never reach it in their practice.

TEXT.

Youth may have wit, but wisdom dwells with age, An hasty judgment, long repentance draws; All omens good, to virtuous minds presage,

A fingle fault, may num'rous mischiefs cause. He shipwreck seeks, who knows not how to

Virtue once rooted, will thro' life appear,
Who thinks not of hereafter, thrives not here.

A more fault row second and chief dans A

Who journeys thro' the world without a plan, Heedless of nature's laws, unskill'd in man; Finds to his cost, what dangers wait on fools, And eager asks, and studious seeks for rules; 'Till chance, observance, friends, by slow degrees, Point out, consirm, or teach him such as these.

timed is prede

rectionable, to reduce of these heattered, and

Experience, is the knowledge of life's road, By those collected, who that road have trod; Let then their counsels your assent engage, Youth may have wit, but wisdom dwells with age.

in a whice which after

Thoughts change with ease, deeds hardly are undone, Be those well weigh'd, e'er these are once begun. Heard on one side scarce any suit has slaws, An hasty judgment, long repentance draws.

III.

Weak minds by superstition are misted, A tim'rous heart attends a shattered head. But wiser you, read this, in reason's page, All omens good, to virtuous minds presage.

WORL TON SYTUTE

IV.

To shin remorse, restect e'er you begin, Slight the it seems, yet ev'ry sin's a sin; The smallest touch infected matter draws, A single fault, may num'rous mischiefs cause.

modelin bl Vie all South or wast at !!

Slow in refolving, think before you move,
Hate not in haste, and ev'n at leisure love;
If safe the road, you'll always find it near,
He shipwreck seeks, who knows not how to
steer.

VI. Thefe

fo

lo

n

to

th

la

rl

fo

H

hands from the chief of the second of the chief

These rules revolve, inscribe them on your mind, Prompt for your use, as you occasion sind; Set out with honour, candid, courteous, clear, Virtue once rooted, will thro' life appear.

outle is in Spanish, and IN that languages in after

As to the form of the venie, taid Mee And

Yet one word more—these lectures all are vain,
And vain alas! your study, cares, and pain;
Unless towards heav'n, your meaning be sincere,
Who thinks not of hereafter, thrives not here.

be willied. Such as baye furecested less on this

I can affure your ladyship, said Sir Lawrence, that as I was highly entertained with your story, fo both the matter and the manner of your epilogue are equally inftructive and pleafant; and not the less so to me, who am quite a stranger to these kind of verses; which however, if I am not greatly mistaken, can be very rarely applied with fo much propriety, as they have been upon this occasion. I should be glad likewise to learn from what country or language they are borrowed; for it has often occurred to me, that much of the old poetry, which is now grown into difuse, lost its beauty and funk into contempt, by being ill written, and worse applied, by such as did not either know or confider any thing more, than how to tag rhimes, and give their productions the fame form with those of eminent writers, believing, that if they looked they must read like them; whereas in such compositions, as well as in the Vol. I. human

human frame, if there is not a correspondence between the subject and the manner of treating that subject, it can give no satisfaction. Thought without harmony refembles a good capacity in a mishapen carcass, and pleasing founds unaccompanied with fenfe, are like a beautiful idiot, whom we contemplate with pity and regret

As to the form of the verse, said Mrs. Anguish, it is Spanish, and in that language there are many pieces of this kind, some serious and fublime, others humorous and entertaining, but all very fprightly, and full of wit; which is indeed the characteristic of Spanish poetry, though it is not always for natural and correct as might be wished. Such as have succeeded best in this way of writing, have chosen for their text a stanza, that has been particularly admired in a grave poem, and have applied it in the gloss to fome diverting subject; the great secret lying in the disposing easily and happily the words of the original author, to a fente very different from, and, if possible, the very reverse of what he intended To do this with dexterity is generally esteemed, and believe, upon trial, will be found extremely difficult, which, perhaps, is the reason why hardly any attempts of this kind have been made in other languages. Though, if my memory does not much mifead me, I have feen fomething of the like nature in Italian, which is the more probable, fince there is a great conformity between the poetry of both nations, their authors taking a pleasure to copy each other in their turns.

that of they look i they than read like them. Hereas in fuch compulsions, as well as in the .I .ICV namud

It is very true, added Mr. Pensive, and I very well remember to have feen a poem of this kind translated from the Spanish of St. Theresa into French by an eminent hand. Something too of this fort there is in our own language by Mr. Crashaw, and it may be by other poets, who wrote about that time; for during the first twenty-five years of the last century, our wits applied themselves with the same diligence to the study of the Spanish writers, as they had done for about fifty years before to the perulal of the Italians. We had indeed far earlier than this, some acquaintance with the best Spanish writers, and the reading their works was much in vogue, during the reign of Philip and Mary; but if not discountenanced, it at least grew into disuse in the beginning of the fucceeding reign, when the Italian poetry came into fashion, and Spenfer, Drayton, and others of our first rate wits, affected from thence to write in stanzas. Sir Lawrence was certainly in the right, when he observed, that there was a peculiar propriety in the application of lady Conftantia's verses; and I must further beg leave to remark, that they were very judiciously introduced by a story that is at leaft as ufeful as any that we have heard; fo that I think we may justly affirm, that the scheme of our entertainment is perfectly compleat, and very far superior to any thing that I expected when we entered upon it.

In my humble fentiment, said Calista, it is now pretty visible, that our plan was conducted by some latent influence, to which it owes that uniformity that put it in her ladyship's power to frame so elegant, and at the same time so natural

tural a conclusion. But however that may be, we reap the benefit of it, and may easily perceive, that a felect company of persons, who have in general the fame turn of mind, may divert themselves wherever they are, in a manner infinitely more suitable to the character of rational beings, than with the usual arts of mufic, dancing and cards. At least, even these are rendered less necessary, and consequently more pleasing by the intervention of such an amusement, which in the preparation and execution, has kept our thoughts in an agreeable agitation for near a fortnight. But now we have tried it, it appears to me very furprifing, that it never occurred to us before; and this the rather, because every one has expressed a kind of impatience to see something of the same fort acted over again.

With Calista's leave, continued Miss Charlotte, I will endeavour to ffrengthen what she has advanced by another remark, which I flatter myfelf, will strongly recommend these moral amusements. When this proposal was first made, we were most of us deep in the vapours, but it was no fooner received, than the spleen was banished from this apartment; and as far as I can recollect, has never made its appearance fince. Mrs. Anguish's fan remains entire; Mr. Pensive's stick has lost its acquaintance with the floor; Captain Courtly has never humm'd a fong in the window; and if I may fay it without offence, Sir Lawrence no longer shuts his eyes, or leans his head upon his elbow in the armed chair, without having the least disposition to sleep. I infer from all this, that the exercise

of

ſ

h

be

fo

pi hi

W

th

th

ha

he

B

pl

gi

th

of the body in the morning, and of the mind in the evening, are fovereign remedies against all distempers intellectual or corporeal. Each is a remedy too infinitely easier and less trouble-some than physic, and the last especially, which if I was disposed to play the quack, I could with facility exalt above all others in a multitude of particulars, which, except one, I shall forbear, and that is, that the effects of this remedy are communicated from one to another; so that if I was not afraid of speaking nonsense, I should say that it excites a kind of healthy contagion,

which no ill humours can relift.

The general approbation that has been bestowed upon these evening discourses, said captain Courtly, has put a thought into my head, which though obvious enough, has escaped every body, except our female philosopher here, Charlotte, and she has touched it so lightly, that methinks a farther explanation will not be distasteful. Amongst other very happy consequences they have had; one has been, our becoming much better pleased with each other. Raillery was formerly the only recreation peculiar to this parlour; we had always discretion enough to hide our foibles from the observance of the world; but the very moment we were alone. those who happened to be in spirits, fell upon the dejected without mercy; and as if the spleen had not been torment enough of itself, it was heightened by a kind of malicious perfecution. But fince these exercises, as I think Calista was pleafed to call them, once began, cenfure has given way to complement, and Sir Lawrence there, instead of shewing his talent in satire, is M 3 become D. 1. 1.

become a perfect courtier. Mr. Pensive's good humour has lasted for a whole week, and that too in fpite of rainy weather; Califta has broke her filence without any of her usual tartness; and the good Miss Charlotte has displayed her wit in very harmless speculations, instead of diverting the company, as fhe used to do, at the expence of Mr. Pensive and myself. Upon the whole, I am thoroughly fatisfied, that though we have been old acquaintance, we were never upon fo good terms with each other as at prefent. After thanking therefore, lady Constantia, for that flow of benevolence and good nature, which has been fo conspicuous upon this occafion; I must do justice also to my friend Beaumont, whose latent influence through this affair was very prettily hinted by one of his fair difciples, and has undoubtedly pervaded our whole moral performance.

It would be a mark of vanity, returned Beaumont, to fuffer this conversation to proceed any further. If it be true, that we have spent a week happily together, and that our mutual fatisfaction role fo high as those young ladies painted it; if the spleen and vapours have been banished by rational conversations; and if we find our dispositions better through the help of a little innocent management; let us learn from thence, that our tranquillity depends more upon ourselves than we commonly imagine; and having made one experiment with fo great fuccess, let us remember our promise to try whether it may not be repeated with at least as good an effect. Time is ever on the wing, these gentlemen are to leave us to-morrow, and methinks it would afford

afford those who are to remain behind, some consolation, if we knew with some kind of cer-

tainty, when they would visit us again.

r

e

e

T

-

r

e

2

;-

d

IT

e

le

-

y

e

d

It was my unwillingness, added lady Constantia, to interrupt those whom I always hear speak with pleasure, that hindered me from making this proposition some time ago; for as the sporting feason is coming on, I am not without some apprehensions, that those impressions which are now fo lively, will be effaced by a variety of diversions, and instead of meeting again to renew our moral amusements, we shall have a train of very genteel excuses, that may possibly put it out of our power to complain; but at the fame time will make us no amends at all for our disappointment. All this I foresee, at the same time I am unwilling to believe. But persons who were not born yesterday, have experienced fuch a variety of instances of this nature, that it is scarce possible for them to stifle their suspicions, more especially, where they think themfelves at liberty to speak freely, and are not wholly without hopes of being heard with patience, and perhaps with pity. - What fay you, Sir Lawrence?

I fay, replied the old gentleman very gravely, that I thought your ladyship knew me better. I was always punctual to my word when a young fellow, and I will venture to fay, that I shall keep it as long as I keep my senses. As for Pensive, there is much the same difficulty in getting him hither, that there is to prevail upon a bird to leave his cage when the door is open; and for Courtly, he is still a man of honour, though some people are malicious enough to say,

3.6

he is no longer a man of gallantry. Upon the whole, madam, these reflections might have been spared, unless you intended them by way of circumlocution, for our being very welcome; and as I am always inclined to understand my friends in the best sense, I am willing to think they were meant fo. - Come, nephew, you have a great faculty at computation, be pleafed to try your skill, in giving these ladies satisfaction; fix the time as well as you can, and then

it shall be my care to keep it.

The divertions, Sir, faid Mr. Pensive, that you have promifed captain Courtly, will certainly take up the best part of the season, and you must then give me leave to put you in mind, that you have promifed lady Constantia's fifter a vifit, which will occupy a week or ten days; fo that fuppoling nothing extraordinary to intervene, I imagine there can be no great miftake in our reckoning, if we fix our return hither, to the beginning of the month of September, or, if the weather should prove very fine. to the middle of it. Of this I am very certain, that the obliging invitation we have received, as well as the remembrance of the many happy days we have spent, will keep this promile fo fresh in my memory, that lady Constantia may fafely lay afide all fear of disappointment, which, to fay the truth, ought rather to have disturbed us, who in such a case must have been infinitely the greatest sufferers.

For my particular, continued captain Courtly, I am so overjoyed at the thoughts of my not being troublesome here, that if her ladyship should add but a word or two more in the fame

1

fame strain, she shall be obliged to change her language before she gets me out of the house; Sir Lawrence talked of a bird in a cage; for my part, I have feen birds wife enough to know when they were well, and that would not be tempted out of good quarters, by leaving the door open. It is true, that fince I have lived in the country, I am become a kind of fportsman, but am not so keen that way, as not to be called off at any time, by the hopes of fuch agreeable conversation. I must confess, that as to the vifit Mr. Pensive has mentioned, I am under the same obligation, and shall very willingly keep my word. We are there almost as happy as we are here, and should be quite so, if this company were disposed to meet us, which, whether it be a thing practicable or not, becomes not me to determine. At all events my friend's computation may be depended upon, and lady Constantia may rest satisfied, that if the fun makes no mistake in his progress this year, we shall return as duly as the season.

In that case, replied lady Constantia, Sir Lawrence Testy, his nephew, and that worthy gentleman, Mr. Courtly, will be heartily welcome without any circumlocution. As to meeting you at my sister's, it was once in my thoughts, but for some reasons will not be expedient this summer. However, Calista and Charlotte may very probably make a tour thither, and Henrietta shall come hither for a fortnight. These are contingencies of no manner of moment to our principal design. There is another thing that possibly may interfere with it, Mr. Beaumont talks of making a journey to town,

but I hope he will contrive it fo, as not to be absent when his presence is most necessary, and this difficulty once removed. I shall no longer

have any dread of difappointments. I drug To

Your ladyship then, added Beaumont, may sleep in peace, for as I have fixed my journey pretty early, and I think it impossible, that business should detain me above a month or fix weeks at most; we shall have space sufficient to collect and to digest our materials against the time of our next meeting, and may providence defend us from any of those accidents that are capable of preventing to innocent and to laudable a renewal of your conversations !- I told you time was on the wing, and his register there will tell you fo too; it is an hour later than our usual time of parting, and these gentlemen must be up early, fo that the best thing we can now do, is to think of going to bed. The gentlemen having, with their acoustomed civility, taken leave of the ladies, retired with Beaumont to his apartment, where they frent an hour or two more over their claret, and then bid each other adien till the close of the fummer, when we shall meet with them again. come without any dictimiocuden. As to meet-

Consint tool a exam cylenders also vair offer The End of the FIRST VOLUME. were to sometime to be about the or at the best in

mean to ode or nearly deliging. There is another thing that wouldby may tote here will lift have Beaumont tails of making a journey to towns

ing you at any fifter's it was based in you thoughts, but for forme resture will not be exerdient this femmen. . . idowever, Calife and Calife

BOOKS printed for A. MILLAR.

HE WORKS of Mr. THOMSON. In 2 vols. Octavo, with cuts.

Ditto four volumes twelves. To both which are

added, some Poems never before printed.

The Seasons, in a pocket edition, and most of his pieces leparate.

The works of Mr. MALLET, confisting of plays

The LIFE of FRANCIS BACON, baron of Verulam, viscount St. Alban, and lord high chancellor of England. In this work, besides an accurate review of the reigns of Queen Elizabeth and King James I. the characters of the most eminent persons that flourished under both those princes, are occasionally drawn. By Mr. MALLET.

POBMS, in 2 vols. The second edition.

The TEA-TABLE MISCELLANY: or, a collection of Scots and English fongs, 4 vols. - N. B. The 4th volume is to be had alone, to complete the fets of such as bought the 3 vols. The eleventh edition.

These two by ALLAN RAMSAY.

The HISTORY of the ADVENTURES of JOSEPH ANDREWS, and his friend, Mr. ABRAHAM ADAMS. Written in imitation of the manner of CERVANTES. author of Don Quixote. The fifth edition, revised and corrected, with alterations and additions, and illustrated with cuts. By HENRY FIELDING, Esq; z vols.

By HENRY FIELDING, Efq; in MISCELLANIES. 3. vois.vi , creatly important a ni

The HISTORY of TOM JONES, a foundling. By HENRY FIELDING, Efq; The fourth edit. in 4 vols.

The ADVENTURES of DAVID SIMPLE : containing an account of his travels through the cities of London and Westminster, in the search of a REAL FRIEND. By a LADY. The fecond edition, revised and corrected, with alterations and additions; and a preface by Henry Fielding, Efq; 2 vols.

FAMILIAR LETTERS between the principal characters in DAVID SIMPLE, and some others. To

which

BOOKS printed for A. MILLAR.

which is added, A Vision. By the author of David

Simple. In 2 vols.

The GOVERNESS: or, The LITTLE FEMALE ACADEMY. Calculated for the entertainment and instruction of young ladies in their education. By the author of DAVID SIMPLE. The second edition revised and corrected. A book entirely adapted, and exceeding proper, for the use of schools.

The HISTORY Of CORNELIA.

LEONORA: or, Characters drawn from real life.

The second edition. 2 vols.

The LADY'S DRAWING-ROOM. Being a faithful picture of the great world. In which the various humours of both sexes are displayed. Drawn from the life.

A POETICAL TRANSLATION of the Works of HORACE: with the original text and notes, collected from the best Latin and French commentators on that author. By the Rev. Mr. Philip Francis, Rector of Skeyton in Norfolk. On a royal paper, in 2 vols. quarto.

Ditto, in 4 vols. octavo.

Ditto, in 4 vols. twelves. The fourth edition.

The PORTICAL WORKS of the Rev. EDWARD Young, LL.D. Rector of Wellwyn in Hertfordshire, and Chaplain in ordinary to his Majesty.

The COMPLAINT: or, NIGHT - THOUGHTS on life, death and immortality. By the same author,

octavo.

The same book in a neat pocket volume, twelves.

The ADVENTURES OF RODERICK RANDOM. The third edition. 2 vols.

MORAL MAXIMS. By the Duke de la ROCHE-FOUCAULT. Translated from the French. With notes.

LETTERS on the SPIRIT of PATRIOTISM; on the idea of a patriot king; and on the state of parties, at the accession of King George the first. 8vo.

The same book in a neat pocket volume, twelves.

45